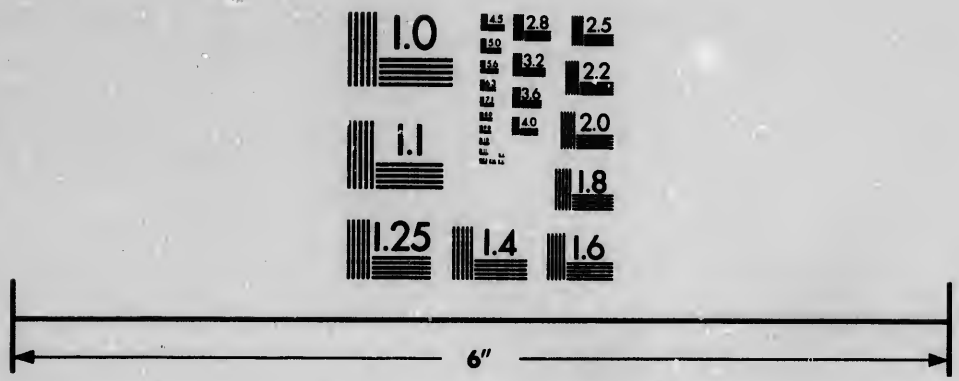
IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.

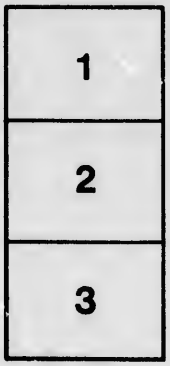
L'institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

- [ ] Coloured covers/ Couverture de couleur
- [ ] Covers damaged/ Couverture endommagée
- [ ] Covers restored and/or laminated/ Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée
- [ ] Cover title missing/ Le titre de couverture manque
- [ ] Coloured maps/ Cartes géographiques en couleur
- [ ] Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/ Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire)
- [ ] Coloured plates and/or illustrations/ Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur
- [ ] Bound with other material/ Relié avec d'autres documents
- [ ] Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion along interior margin/ La reliure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la distorsion le long de la marge intérieure
- [ ] Blank leaves added during restoration may appear within the text. Whenever possible, these have been omitted from filming/ Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées lors d'une restauration apparaissant dans le texte, mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont pas été filmées.
- [ ] Coloured pages/ Pages de couleur
- [ ] Pages damaged/ Pages endommagées
- [ ] Pages restored and/or laminated/ Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées
- [x] Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/ Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées
- [ ] Pages detached/ Pages détachées
- [x] Showthrough/ Transparence
- [ ] Quality of print varies/ Qualité inégale de l'impression
- [ ] Includes supplementary material/ Comprend du matériel supplémentaire
- [ ] Only edition available/ Seule édition disponible
- [ ] Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to ensure the best possible image/ Les pages totalement ou partiellement obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure, etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à obtenir la meilleure image possible.

- [x] Additional comments:/ Commentaires supplémentaires: Pagination as follows : [i] - xi, [1], [9] - 191 p.

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/
Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.

10X		14X		18X		22X		26X		30X	
				✓							
12X		16X		20X		24X		28X		32X	



G

VOC

Ancien

FRENCH

EXA

PRI

NOUVELLE

GRAMMAIRE FRANÇAISE,

COMPRISING

VOCABULARIES AND EXERCISES; A COMPLETE GRAMMAR TO THE SYNTAX, ETC.; AND A READING BOOK.

PAR

EMILE COULON,

Ancien élève du Collége de St. Germain-en-Laye; et ensuite de l'Ecole Préparatoire de St. Mandé, pour l'admission à la Marine, à l'Armée, à l'Ecole Polytechnique, et à l'Ecole Centrale des Arts et Manufactures; etc.

FRENCH MASTER IN THE MODEL-GRAMMAR OF UPPER CANADA, AND TORONTO GRAMMAR SCHOOLS; MR. FRANK'S ACADEMY, ETC. ETC.

EXAMINER FOR THE FRENCH AND GERMAN LANGUAGES IN THE UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO FOR 1860 AND 1861.

SECOND EDITION.

TORONTO:

PRINTED AND PUBLISHED BY W. C. CHEWETT & CO., KING STREET, EAST.

1862.

PRINTED AT THE STEAM PRESS ESTABLISHMENT OF W. C. CHEWETT & CO., TORONTO.

ERRATA.

				From top line.	From bottom line.
Read un	Instead of on,	page 11			6
" on	" un,	" 11			4
" french	" frech,	" 19	9		
" faithful	" faithfol,	" 21	17		
" to	" of,	" 22	12		
" gardener	" gardner,	" 22	12		
" Seule	" scule,	" 23	17		
" Dieu, m. pl. x.	" Dieu, m. pl. s.	" 25	3		
" are	" and,	" 25			7
" altérée	" alteré,	" 26			4
" good	" good,	" 27	12		
" verb	" verbe,	" 29	14		
" five shirts	" five pair of shirts,	" 30	5		
" le vaisseau	" le vaisseaux,	" 30	20		
" les tableaux	" les tabbleaux,	" 30	23		
" these people	" this people,	" 31	17		
" have they, f. pl.	" have they, f.	" 46			3
" number	" *namber*,	" 49	3		
" very	" ery,	" 50			1
" of to go	" (of to go),	" 51	15		
" 2nd conjugation	" first conjugation,	" 53	3		
" Verbs of	" VERBSOF,	" 54	11		
" ennuie	" enunie,	" 61	3		
" l'eau-de-vie	" éau-de vie,	" 62	11		
" quick	" qnick,	" 81	4		
" the	" ths,	" 114			4
" nous serons	" nous seront,	" 117	14		14
" j'acquerrai	" j'acquierrai,	" 148	2 col.		
" bout	" bont,	" 149	7 "		
" je vêtis	" je v ties,	" 149	9 "		
" its	" it,	" 151			7
" falloir	" failloir,	" 154	5		5

PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION.

Les étrangers, qui mettent avant tout leur amour-propre à parler correctement le français, n'osent pas juger nos écrivains autrement que les autorités littéraires ne les jugent, de peur de passer pour ne pas les comprendre.

" Ils vantent le style plus que les idées, parce que les idées appartiennent à toutes les nations, et que les Français seuls sont juges du style dans leur langue."

Mme. de Staël.

The French language is rapidly becoming in Toronto, what it is in Europe, the language of select Society ; and the special aim I have already successfully kept in view of extending its use, and rendering its acquisition an easy task, is a sufficient apology for publishing a Second Edition of my work.

During the ten years I have been in Canada, it has been my privilege to be the instructor of many young ladies of the first families both in Toronto and from other parts of the Province.

I have, therefore, been able to ascertain their requirements and the defective system previously pursued ; and under the method adopted by me, the learning and speaking of this specially useful tongue, have been mastered by numerous pupils under my care.

This success has not been limited to private families, but extends to public academies, from which my pupils on proceeding to the University of Toronto, have repeatedly obtained the highest standing in French as well as in German.

I may state that at examinations for entering the British army, several of them passed with great distinction ; and such success I refer to, with the greater confidence, as my pupils have too frequently been limited to such a brief period of study, especially in

public seminaries, as to place both them and myself under the greatest disadvantage.

These and other impediments have not been overcome without exertions which for a time seriously impaired my health; but the highly satisfactory results finally attained, enable me now to look back on my labour, with unalloyed pleasure; and to appeal with confidence alike to my pupils and their guardians in confirmation of my uniform success, wherever my exertions have been adequately appreciated.

Toronto, April, 1862. EMILE COULON.

GENERAL OBSERVATIONS.

Le français ayant été parlé plus qu'aucun autre dialecte européen, est à la fois poli pour l'usage et acéré pour le but. Aucune langue n'est plus claire et plus rapide, n'indique plus légèrement et n'explique plus nettement ce qu'on veut dire.

Mme. de Staël.

Although I have explained in the First Edition, the method upon which this work is based, as I have greatly improved and enlarged upon it, a few words of explanation may not be found amiss.

THE FIRST PART.

The first part as revised, contains all that is needed for a thorough and complete beginning.

The exercises are designed to aid in the application of the vocabularies and of a few rules interspersed through it, freed from such intricate idioms that are superfluous to the young student.

The few rules thus introduced would be particularly difficult to remember, as is the case in all Ollendorffian systems, did not the Second Part or Grammar, reproduce them in their proper order, time and place.

In these exercises, I have deviated from the ordinary practice, and have marked only those words which vary in their inflexions in French, and which are invariable in English.

THE SECOND PART.

The second part I have entirely remodelled. It offers complete and comprehensive rules to the Syntax.

And by paying a close attention to the manner in which I have classified the formation of the feminine in adjective, the pronouns and especially in verbs, it will be found more correct as well as more simple than what has hitherto been published on that subject.

The verbs are fully detailed; and in order to facilitate the study of the irregular verbs, I have introduced (page 144,) a rule for the formation of all irregular verbs of the 2nd, 3rd, and 4th conjugations.

Besides this, I have been careful to place the derivative tenses next to those from which they are formed, so as to supersede the arduous and slow manner in which they were learned before, which so greatly impeded the progress of students, and to render it mere child's play. Were this its only feature, it would suffice to confer on this work a value, which others of this kind could vainly claim.

At page 93, I have treated the gender of nouns, and the rule there given, simple as it is, has proved fully adequate to the general want.

The difficulty experienced when writing French composition, with respect of the using of the prepositions either with verbs, nouns or other prepositions, is at once removed by the list and application of them, p. 168. They will prove beneficial alike to the beginner and the advanced student.

THE THIRD PART.

The Third Part is entirely different in its contents from the former edition, in which the subjects were too diversified and too long to retain with advantage.

The method is precisely the same, with this addition, that the verbs, in full, are printed in italics, so as to command the attention of the scholar and enable him to be exercised upon the different parts of the verbs.

The English of the Third Part is selected from good English authors.

I have adapted the translation of each to the other, so as to bring out in a forcible and clear manner, the differences of the two languages, and to give an insight into the construction of them.

With regard to the 1st and 2nd parts, I am indebted to the Rev. Mr. Checkley, the learned Rector of the Model Grammar School, who kindly revised the English of it.

In reproducing this little work, my anxious desire has been to render it worthy of my friends and pupils, and such as shall secure the favour of Canadians in general.

E. C.

CONTENTS.

ABBREVIATIONS OCCURRING IN THE FIRST PART.

adj. *or* ad.	*means*	adjective.
adv.	do.	adverb.
f.	do.	feminine gender.
f. s.	do.	feminine and singular.
m.	do.	masculine gender.
m. s.	do.	masculine and singular.
m. *or* f. pl.	do.	masculine or feminine plural.
m. *or* f. s..	do.	masculine or feminine singular.
part.	do.	participle.
pl.	do.	plural.
pr.	do.	pronoun.
pre.	do.	preposition.
s.	do.	singular.
v.	do.	verb.

A star (*) under one word or one letter or under several words in brackets, shows that this word or words or letter must not be translated in French.

Parenthesis inclosing so ( ) one word or more, not marked with an asterisk, shows that this word or words ought to be used in French instead of the preceding marked with an asterisk.

FIRST PART.

PREMIERE LEÇON.—FIRST LESSON.

OF LETTERS.

Vowels : A, E, I, O, U, Y.

THEIR SOUND.

A

a has the sound of *a* in *cat*, *bat*, *hat*.
papa, *opéra*, *affable*, *aimable*.

E

e *without any accent*, has the sound of *u* in *cut*, *but*, *nut*.
me, me ; *te*, thee ; *de*, of ; *ce*, this ; *que*, that ; *celui*, the one ; *le*, the, it.

I

i has the sound of *ee* in *feel*, also *i* in *pit*.
image, image ; *civilité*, civility ; *tranquillité*, tranquillity.

O

o has the sound of *oa* in *boat*, *coat*.
potage, soup ; *position*, position ; *autorité*, authority.

U

u has no equivalent in English.
chute, fall ; *but*, end, aim ; *refus* refusal.

Y

y called *i-grec*, (Greek i) has the sound of the French *i*, also of the French *ii*, when placed after a vowel followed by another vowel or a consonant.

physique ; y, there; *moyen*, means ; *pays*, country ; *moyenne*, average.

IMPORTANT REMARK.—The French vowels unlike the English, never vary in sound, and consequently should never be departed from.

REMARKS UPON THE VOWEL E.

é with the acute accent (*'é*,) sounds like *a* in fate, as : *bonté*, kindness ; *charité*, charity ; *été*, summer.

è with grave (*`è*,) sounds like *ay* in r*ay*, as *mère*, mother ; *père*, father.

ê with the circumflex (*^ê*) sounds something like *è* but a little longer, as *même*, same.

e called mute or silent, and without any mark over it, in monosyllables or in words of but one syllable, as : *me, te, ce ;* has the sound of the *u* in b*u*t, n*u*t, as given before ; but at the end of a word of more than one syllable, sounds little or not at all, as : *Je donne*, I give ; *Je prie*, I pray.

IMPORTANT REMARK.—The terminations (*e, es*, unaccented) at the end of any word, must not be heard, unless it be of one syllable, as : *de, des*.

Ent, termination of the 3rd plural in verbs, is never heard.

DEUXIÈME LEÇON.—SECOND LESSON.

DIPHTHONGS AND OTHERS, AND THEIR SOUNDS.

au, *eau*, sound like *oa* in *boat*; Example: T*aureau*, bull.
ai, *ay*, do. *ay* in p*ay*: payer, to pay; p*aix*, peace.
ei, *ey*, sound someting like *ai*, *ay*, but not so broad: *reine*, queen; *dey*, dey.
oi, *oy*, sound like *wa* in water: *roi*, King; *royaume*, kingdom.
ou sounds like *oo* in *cool*: *où*, where; *pour*, for.
eu, sounds something like *u* in *fur*: *peur*, fear.
œu, do. do *i* in *sir*: *sœur*, sister.

REMARK.—*eu*, all throughout the verb *Avoir*; to have, has the sound of the French *u*: *J'ai eu*, I have had; *Nous eûmes*, We had.

NASAL VOWELS.

They are:—

1.

AN, EN, generally the same.
enfant, child.

2.

IN, EIN, AIN AIM; nearly the same.
fin, end; *frein*, check; *pain*, bread, loaf; *faim*, hunger; *dessein*, design; *dessin*, drawing.

3.

ON, the sound of the vowel must be borne in mind.
chacun, each; *un*, one, a; *aucun*, any, none.

4.

UN, the sound of the vowel must be borne in mind.
don, gift; *garçon*, boy; *maison*, house; *salon*, parlor.

5.

OIN, the sound of the vowel must be borne in mind.
point, not, point; *coin*, corner; *soin*, care.

REMARK.—*en*, after *i* or *y* sounds generally like *in*, as *chien*, dog; *payen*, pagan.

N. B.—Their sound can only be learned from the Teacher.

OF CONSONANTS AND THEIR NAMES.

There is no W in French. It is used for foreign words, chiefly taken from English or German. We pronounce it like letter *v*, or give it the value of *u*.

G and c before *a*, *o*, *u*; sound hard as: go, co, *gardien*, *camarade*.

But *g* followed by *e*, *i*, *y*; is soft; and *c* with a crooked mark under it, *ç*, sounds like *s* as: *garçon*.

Letters.	Former sound.	New Sounds by which every one of the letters is masculine.
B	bé	be
C	cé	ce
D	dé	de
F	eff	fe
G	gé	ge
H	ash	he
J	ji	je
K	ka	ke
L	ell	le
M	emm	me
N	enn	ne
P	pé	pe
Q	ku	ke
R	err	re
S	ess	se
T	té	te
V	vé	ve
X	iks	kse
Z	zed	ze
W	double *vé*	double *ve*

N. B.—Generally speaking, consonants are not heard at the end of French words, unless followed by some vowel, so: *part*, part; *port*, port; *t* silent; but *partie*, part; *porte*, door; *t* heard.

As soon as the pupils have acquired a good knowledge of the *sound* and *value* of the French *vowels*, *diphthongs* and *consonants*; then let them begin to learn the vocabularies, and read the THIRD PART OF *Lecture*,

TROISIEME LEÇON.—THIRD LESSON.

ARTICLE.

There is *no other way* of expressing the article, than that given below :

	Masculine singular, before a consonant or *h* aspirate.	*Fem. sing.*, before a consonant or *h* aspirate.	*Masc.* or *fem.*, sing. before a vowel or *h* silent.	*Masc.* or *fem.* pl., before a consonant or a vowel an *h* aspirate or silent.
The	*le*	*la*	*l'*	*les*
Of or from the	*du*	*de la*	*de l'*	*des*
At or to the	*au*	*à la*	*à l'*	*aux*
Some or any	*du*	*de la*	*de l'*	*des*

REM.—*de le, à les, à le, de les ;* can never be used as articles.

DU GENRE ET DU NOMBRE.—OF GENDER AND NUMBER

There are but *two genders* in French : the masculine and feminine ; there is no *neuter* gender.

Adjectives and Articles agree in gender and number with the nouns to which they relate.

bon m.	good.	*et t* sil.	and.
bonne f.	do.	*est s* sil.	is.
bons. m. pl.	do.	*a*	has, *verb.*
bonnes f. pl.	do.	*à*	to, *prep.*

Le bon père,	The good father.
La bonne mère,	The good mother.
Le bon frère,	The good brother.
La bonne sœur,	The good sister.
Les bons pères,	The good fathers.
Les bonnes mères,	The good mothers.

J'ai une bonne mère,	I have a good mother,
Tu as une bonne sœur,	Thou hast a good sister.
Il a un bon enfant,	He has a good child.
On a un ami,	One has a friend.
Nous avons des fils,	We have (some) sons.
Vous avez des filles,	You have (some) daughters.
Ils ont un frère,	They have a brother.

QUATRIEME LEÇON.—FOURTH LESSON.

ADJECTIFS POSSESSIFS.—POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

(See Possessive Adjectives, Part II.)

mon m. s.	*ma* f. s.	*mes* m. or f. pl.		my.
ton m. s.	*ta* f. s.	*tes*	do.	thy.
son m. s.	*sa* f. s.	*ses*	do.	his, her.

PLURAL.

notre m. or f. singular.		*nos* m. or f. pl.		our.
votre do.	"	*vos*	do.	your.
leur do.	"	*leurs*	do.	their.

These possessive adjectives can only precede nouns; they agree with them in gender and number, and must not be confounded with *mine, thine, its.*

Mon bon père,	My good father.
Ma bonne mère,	My good mother.
Tes bonnes sœurs,	Thy good sisters.
Ses jeunes enfants,	His or her good children.

Ai-je?	Have I?	*il,*	he or it	*Il, elle, ils, elles;* must take the gender and number of the nouns they represent.
as-tu?	hast thou?	*elle,*	she or it	
a-t-il?	has he?	*ils,*	they m.	
a-t-elle?	has she?	*elles,*	they f.	
avez-vous?	have you			

Son livre est bon,	His book is good.
Il *est petit,*	It is small.
Sa *plume est bonne,*	His pen is good.
Elle *est petite,*	It is small.

Mes frères ont un grand jardin ; ils *ont aussi un petit jardin.*
My brothers have a large garden ; they have also a small garden.

J'ai eu de l'or, m.	I have had some gold.
Tu as eu de l'argent, m.	Thou hast had some silver.
Il a eu du fer, m.	He has had some iron.
On a eu du pain, m.	One has had some bread.
Nous avons eu des pommes, f. pl.	We have had some apples.
Vous avez eu un couteau, m. s.	You have had a knife.
Ils ont eu des canifs, m. pl.	The have had some penknives.
Elle a eu des encriers, m. pl.	She has had some inkstands.

Mind the Remark, page 11, for *eu.*

CINQUIÈME LEÇON—FIFTH LESSON.

ADJECTIFS DEMONSTRATIFS.	DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES.
Ce m. s. this or that, before a consonant or *h* aspirate.	*Ce cadeau,* this gift.
	Ce hameau, this hamlet.
Cet m. s. this or that, before a vowel or *h* silent.	*Cet encrier,* that inkstand.
	Cet homme, this man.
Cette f. s. this or that, before a vowel or a consonant, an *h* asp. or sil.	*Cette plume,* this pen.
	Cette ardoise, that slate.
Ces m. or f. pl. these or those, before any word plural.	*Ces pommes,* these apples.
	Ces enfants, those children.

In French, the genitive or possessive case is expressed by *de,* of; placed after the nominative or accusative, whilst in English, the genitive or possessive comes before the nominative or accusative.

Le livre de mon père,	My father's book.

The dative is expressed by *à* as :

J'écris à mon père, I write to my father.
J'ai prêté un livre à mon ami, I have lent a book to my friend.

oncle,	uncle.	*riche,* m. or f. s.	rich.
ami, m.	friend.	*pauvre,* do	poor.
arbre, m.	tree.	*jeune,* do	young.
homme, h sil.	man.	*malade,* do	ill, sick.
encore,	yet, still.	*jaloux,* m.	jealous.

Je suis jeune, I am young.
Tu es singulier, Thou art strange.
On est fâché, One is sorry.
Nous sommes tristes, We are sad.
Vous êtes malades, You are ill.
Ils sont riches, They are rich.

Adjectives ending with *e* mute can be masculine or feminine.

The plural of nouns and adjectives is generally formed by adding *s* to the singular.

(See Adjectives, and Formation of the Plural in the Adjectives, Part II.)

SIXÈME LEÇON.—SIXTH LESSON.

PRONOMS RELATIFS ET ABSOLUS.—RELATIVE AND ABSOLUTE PRONOUNS.

Qui, who, whom ; relates to persons only,
Que, what ; relates to things only,
} When they are not preceded by any noun or pronoun.

ABSOLUTE.

Qui est là ? Who is there ?
Qui avez-vous vu ? whom have you seen ?
Qu'avez-vous ? What have you ? What is the matter with you ?

RELATIVE.

(1.) N. B.—*Qui*,, m. or f., s. or pl. *nominative* of a verb, and preceded by a noun or pronoun, means *which, who, that*; it relates to persons and things, and may be of either gender and number.

(2.) *Que*, m. f. s. pl. *accusative* governed by a verb, and preceded by a noun or pronoun, means *which, that, whom*; it relates to persons or to things, and may be of either gender and number.

(See Relative Pronouns, Part II.)

L'homme qui *a une voiture est riche.*	The man who has a carriage is rich.
Les prunes qu'*on a données à cet enfant sont belles.*	The plums which one has given to this child are beautiful.
Elle a vu le cheval qui *est pour vous.*	She has seen the horse which is for you.
Nous avons aimé l'enfant qu'*on a amené.*	We have liked the child whom they have brought.

The *i* of *qui* is never dropped before a vowel.
The *e* of *que* is always dropped before a vowel.

la tante,	aunt.	*acheté,*	bought.
le chapeau, m.	hat.	*perdu,*	lost.
la montre, f.	watch.	*trouvé,*	found.
le canif, m.	pen-knife.	*lu,*	read.

Ou, or ; *où*, where ; *mais*, but ; *pour*, for ; *très*, very ; *fort*, very, much ; *dans*, in ; *sur*, upon ; *de*, of, or from.

le voisin, m.	*la voisine,* f.	The neighbour.
le cousin, m.	*la cousine,* f.	The cousin.
l'ami, m.	*l'amie,* f.	The friend.
le jardinier, m.	*la jardinière,* f.	The gardener.

la lettre f, the letter f; *la femme*, the wife, the woman.

The learning of the verbs, as given in the *Seconde Partie*, should be begun at once; and *Avoir* and *Etre* known, before the Exercises are written.

SEPTIÈME LEÇON.—SEVENTH LESSON.

QUELQUES VOCABULAIRES.—SOME VOCABULARIES.

DES PRONOMS POSSESSIFS AU SINGULIER.—SOME POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS IN THE SINGULAR.

Plus, more. *Moins*, less. *Que*, than.

agréable, m. or f. s.	agreeable.	Adjectifs.
utile, do	useful.	
joli, m. *jolie*, f. s.	pretty.	
fatigué, m. *fatiguée*, f. s.	tired.	
facile, m. or f. s.	easy.	
difficile, do.	difficult.	
fidèle do.	faithful.	
honnête, do.	honest, polite.	
haut, m. *haute*, f. s.	high.	
habile, m. or f. s.	clever.	

SUBSTANTIFS.		PRONOMS POSSESSIFS.		
le chien, m.	the dog.	*le mien*, m.	*la mienne*, f.	mine.
le chat, m.	the cat.	*le tien*, m.	*la tienne*, f.	thine.
la campagne, f.	the country.	*le sien*, m.	*la sienne*, f.	his, hers.
la ville, f.	the town.	*le nôtre*, m.	*la nôtre*, f.	ours.
le soleil, m.	the sun.	*le vôtre*, m.	*la vôtre*, f.	yours.
la lune, f.	the moon.	*le leur*, m.	*la leur*, f.	theirs.
la tâche, f.	the task.			
le thème, m.	the exercise.			

(See Possessive Pronouns, Part II.)

REMARK.—Possessive pronouns never precede nouns; they represent them, take the place of them and agree in gender and number with them.

COMPARATIFS.—COMPARATIVES.

The comparative of superiority is formed by placing *plus* before the adjective, and *que* after it; that of inferiority by placing *moins* before, and *que* after—

Ton livre est plus *cher que le mien,*
Thy book is dearer than mine.
Cette enfant est moins *grande* que *son frère.*
That child is not so tall as—or less—than her brother.

So that the termination *er*, which in English is added to form the comparative of superiority, is to be represented in French by *plus* before the adjective in the positive.

(See the formation of Comparatives in Adjectives, Part II.)

HUITIÈME LEÇON.—EIGHTH LESSON.

PRONOMS DÉMONSTRATIFS.	DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.
celui, m. s. that or the one. *celle*, f. s. do. *ceux*, m. pl. these, those the ones. *celles*, f. pl. do. *cela*, m. s. has no pl., that. *ceci*, do. do. this. [The word *thing* is understood.]	These pronouns must not be confounded with the adjectives of the same name; for pronouns never precede nouns, but simply take the place of the nouns, and also their *gender* and *number*.

(See Demonstrative Pronouns, Part II.)

IMPORTANT REMARK.—The English word *that* has many meanings, and as it is translated differently in French for each meaning, the following examples will serve for illustration:

1.

That, before a noun relating to it, by *ce, cet, cette*; adjectives.
That penholder is good, *Ce porte-plume est bon.*

2.

That, in the place of a noun or before a relative pronoun or followed by a preposition, by *ce, celui, celle;* pronouns.

That which you say is true, *Ce que vous dites est vrai.*

3.

That representing a masculine noun understood :

That of your brother is gilt, *Celui de votre frère est doré.*

4.

That, preceded by a noun or other pronoun, by *que, qui*, relative pronouns.

The lesson *that* I have is long, *La leçon que j'ai est longue.*

The pen *that* is broken, *La plume qui est cassée.*

5.

That, meaning that thing, by *cela.*

That is dirty, *Cela est sale.*

6.

That, when it cannot be changed into *which, this*, or *whom ;* that is, when it is a conjunction, connecting verbs or sentences together, must be translated in French by *que*, the *e* of which is cut off before a vowel.

I know *that* you are here, *Je sais que vous êtes ici.*

You say *that* he is there. *Vous dites qu'il est là.*

Another important Remark.—As the French have no different words for *that* and *this*, and *these* and *those*, they make use of the adverbs *ci*, here, and *là*, there ; when any comparison is made between two nouns preceded by *ce, cette, cet* or *ces ;* and not determined by any thing that follows, or again after the demonstrative pronouns *celui, celle, ceux, celles;* for the same reasons.

Ce cahier-ci est plus gros que ce cahier-là.	This copy book is larger than that copy book.
Celui-ci est bon, celui-là est mauvais,	This one is good, that one is bad.

N. B.—The words *ci* and *là* must be preceded by a hyphen(-).

J'ai été enfant, adj.	I have been a child.
Tu as été cruel, adj.	Thou hast been cruel.
Il a été à l'école, subst.	He has been at school.
On a été muet, adj.	One has been dumb.
Nous avons été aveugles adj.	We have been blind.
Vous avez été libre or *s.* pl. adj.	You have been free.
Ils ont été sauvages, adj.	They have been wild.

REMARKS.—If the pupils are too young, the following exercises should be read from the book, without their writing them at first.

NEUVIÈME LEÇON.—NINTH LESSON.

RECAPITULATION OF THE PRECEDING LESSONS, AND EXERCISE TO WRITE OR TO SAY ON ALL THAT HAS GONE BEFORE.

THÈME.

These houses are high *f. pl.* ; they *f. pl.* are higher *f. pl.* than mine *f. pl.*—Have they seen my *m.* horse and my *m.* dog ; they are very faithfnl *pl.*—That *f.* poor woman is very ill ; she is poorer and more ill than that man.—Our father's uncle has lost a *f.* pen, *f.*—That dog is pretty, *m.* ; it is prettier *m.* and larger *m.* than my neighbour's dog.—Who has bought a *m.* larger *m.* hat than that *m.* which (*acc.*) I have ?—Our child is younger than that *m.* of thy uncle.—His *m.* exercise *m.* is less difficult than that *m.* which (*acc.*) your master has given to your little cousin.—This *f.* task is more difficult than that *f.* which (*acc,*) you have in your book *m.*—The *f.* house of the gardener is larger *f.* than that *f.* of your neighbour.—Thy *m.* hat *m.* is smaller *m.* than mine *m.*, and than (See page 19.) that *m.* of thy *f.* mother.

The *f.* moon is smaller *f.* than the sun *m.*—Where is your little brother ?—I have lost my *m.* pen-knife in the *m* garden of

my neighbour.—Where have you lost your pen-knife ? *m.*—She is rich, but I am richer.—The *m.* hat that (See p. 17.) *acc.* you have found is for my *f.* sister, who has lost hers, *m.* (See p. 18.) —Hast thou seen my *m.* book ?—This good *m.* child has a very good *f.* mother and a very good *m.* father.—I have sent a *f.* large *f.* letter *f.* to your cousin.—Your good *f.* aunt is still very young.—His *pl.* sons are very sick. *pl.*—Her *m.* son is very ill. —They have found their *f.* watch in her *m.* garden.—Thy mother has given *m.* a little book to that child.—You are rich, but I am poor.—Thou hast given a *m.* penknife to that poor child.—Have you seen my father's book, (in Fr.) the *m.* book of my father.— I have bought this *m.* tree of this gardner.—My father is the friend of the neighbour, *m.* or *f.*

N. B.—Attentiou must be paid to the agreement of the adjectives with the nouns in gender and number ; and this remark applies to all adjectives, wether demonstrative, possessive, indefinite or qualificative.

DIXIÈME LEÇON.—TENTH LESSON.

VOCABULAIRES.

la fleur, f.	the flower.	*J'aime*,	I love, I like.
la pomme, f.	the apple.	*il aime*,	he loves.
la poire, f.	the pear.	*aimé*,	loved.
la cerise, f.	the cherry.	*arrosé*,	watered.
la chambre, f.	the room.	*mangé*,	eaten.
la table, f.	the table.	*reçu*,	received.
la chaise, f.	the chair.	*vendu*,	sold.
le jour, m.	the day.	*écrit*,	written.
le mois, m.	the month.	*souvent*, adv.	often.
l'an, m.	the year.	*toujours*, adv.	always.
la semaine, f.	the week.	*il y a*, imp. v.	there is, there are.
		est,	belongs.
		sont,	belong.

s'appelle, 3d. s.	is called. calls himself. calls herself. calls itself.	*s'appellent*, 3d. pl.	are called. call themselves.

NOMS PROPRES.—PROPER NAMES.

Jean,	John,	*Douvres*,	Dover.
Charles,	Charles,	*Londres*,	London.
Louis,	Lewis.	*Bruxelles*, *x* like *ss*.	Brussels.
Louise,	Louisa.	*Paris*, *s* silent.	Paris.
François,	Francis.	*Vienne*,	Vienna.
Henri,	Henry.	*Québec*,	Quebec.
Guillaume,	William.	*Mont-réal*, *t* sil.	Montreal.
Edouard,	Edward.	*Terre-neuve*,	New found land.
Emile,	Æmilius.		
Georges,	George.		
Alphonse,	Alphonso.		

[REM. *In*, is expressed before cities by *à* : In Paris, *à Paris* ; before countries, by *en* : In England, *en Angleterre*, f.]

Je serai seul m. *senle* f.	I shall be alone.
Tu seras mort, m. *morte*, f.	Thou shalt be dead.
Il sera instruit, m. *instruite*, f.	He will be learned.
On sera heureux, m. *heureuse*, f.	One will be happy.
Nous serons braves, pl. f. or m.	We will be brave.
Vous serez présents, pl. m.	You will be present.
Ils seront absents, pl. m.	They will be away.

Adverbs follow the verb :

Eng.	[1]I	[3]often	[2]have [4]pears.
	J'ai	*souvent*	*des poires.*
Fr.	I have	often	some pears.

EXERCISE.

The gardens which *acc.* we have seen *pl.* in (at) the *f.* country are very large. *pl.*—The cats that, (See p. 16.) are in your house, belong to me.—She is happier *f.* than our neighbour. *f.*

This mother is very happy. *f.*—(Henry's sisters) are still very young. *pl.*—Our *s.* (neighbour's children) are tired. *pl.*—I love the (neighbour's children ;) they are very clever. *pl.*—These cherries *f.* are very good. *f. pl.*—I (often) write to my *pl.* friends who are in London.—We have received a *f.* letter from Lewis ; he is in Paris.—My *f.* cousin (is called) Louisa.—My sister has some *pl.* chairs in her *f.* room.—There are some *pl.* dogs in that *f.* little *f.* town.

ONZIÈME LEÇON.—ELEVENTH LESSON.

PRONOMS POSSESIFS AU PLURIEL.—POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS IN THE PLURAL.

les miens, m. pl.	*les miennes,* f. pl.	mine.
les tiens, do.	*les tiennes,* do.	thine.
les siens, do.	*les siennes,* do.	his, hers.
les nôtres, do.	*les nôtres.* do.	ours.
les vôtres, do.	*les vôtres,* do.	yours.
les leurs, do.	*les leurs,* do.	theirs.

ADJECTIFS INDÉFINIS.—INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES.

Tout m. s. *toute,* f. s. *tous,* m. pl. *toutes,* f. pl. all, whole.

Tout not followed by the article, means every, each.

Tout is generally followed by the article before the next noun, and means the whole, or all.

Tout le jour, m.	The whole day.
Tous les jours,	Every day.
Tous les hommes,	All men.
Tout le monde,	Every body, the whole world.

VOCABULAIRE.

un chelin,	m. pl. *s.* a shilling.	*fini,*	done, finished.
un sou,	m. pl. *s.* a half-penny.	*pleuré,*	cried.
Dieu,	m. pl. *s.* God.	*créé,* m. *e* f.	created.
la terre,	f. pl. *s.* the earth.	*envoyé,*	sent.
la nuit,	f. pl. *s.* the night.	*payé,*	paid for.
le jour,	m. pl. *s.* the day.	*j'écris,*	I write.
le soir,	m. pl. *s.* the evening.	*avec,*	with, together.
le matin,	m. pl. *s.* the morning.	*aussi,*	also, too, as.
la prairie,	f. pl. *s.* the meadow.	*de,*	of, from.

EXERCISE.

I write every *pl.* day *pl.* to London and (to) Paris.—Your *pl.* uncles are richer *pl.* than mine, *m. pl.* but his *m. pl.* are still richer. *pl.*—We have bought those *pl.* apples for twenty (half-pennies).—Have you written all *f. pl.* these *pl.* letters.—I have sent every *m. pl.* day *pl.* some *m. s.* money to the *pl.* poor. *pl.*—God has created the whole *m.* world.—All *m. pl.* those exercises *pl.* are easy. *m. pl.*—He has paid (for) all *f. pl.* these *pl.* cherries.—We have found all *f. pl.* these *pl.* pears in the *m.* garden of our cousin. —I love all *m. pl.* my *pl.* children and those *m. pl.* (See p. 19.) of my neighbour.—Thou hast given these books to my good friend. Those *pl.* trees are high. *m. pl.*—Their *pl* pens, are good. *f. pl.*—Your *pl.* children have received two letters from their uncle.—I often write to his *pl.* brothers.—William has written two letters to his friends who are in Quebec, to Lewis and to John.—Your *pl.* children and in Berlin ; theirs *pl.* are in Dover.—We have watered our *pl.* flowers and yours *pl.* also.—Where are your *pl.* books and (your) *pl.* pens ?—My *pl.* sisters have received a *m* present from their *pl.* aunts.

N. B.—Attention must be paid to the agreement of the adjectives with the nouns in gender and number, as it is the chief difficulty for the ready and correct speaking and writing of the French language.

DOUZIÈME LEÇON.—TWELFTH LESSON.

Du, de; de la, de l', des; some or any; must be expressed before every *noun*, and never understood as in English.

REM.—(*De le, de les, à le, à les,*) can never be used in French as articles.

J'étais curieux, m. *curieuse,* f.	I was inquisitive.
Tu étais savant, m. *e* f	Thou wast learned.
Il était sage, m. or f.	He was wise, good.
Nous étions puissants, m. pl.	We were powerful.
Vous étiez reçus. do.	You were received.
Ils étaient inquiets. do.	They were uneasy.

J'avais des pains-à-cacheter,	I had wafers.
Tu avais de la générosité,	Thou hadst generosity.
Il avait de l'intelligence,	He had intellect.
Nous avions des huîtres,	We had oysters.
Vous aviez du courage,	You had courage.
Ils avaient de la politesse,	They had politeness.

For the following, the French use TO HAVE and NOT TO BE with nouns, and not with adjectives as in English.

J'avais froid, m.	I was cold.	(I had cold.)
Tu avais faim, m.	Thou wast hungry.	(Thou hadst hunger.)
Il avait chaud, m.	He was warm.	(He had heat.)
Elle avait soif.	She was thirsty.	(She had thirst.)

Or else an adjective as in English:

Je fus gelé.	I was cold.
Tu fus affamé,	Thou wast hungry,
Il fut échauffé,	He was warm.
Elle fut altéré,	She was thirsty.

VOCABULAIRE.

le roi,	the king.	*le soldat,*	the soldier,
la reine,	the queen.	*le matelot,*	the sailor.

du roi,	of the king.	*la partie,* f.	the part.
de la reine,	of the queen.	*la vie,* f.	the life.
le peuple, m. s.	the people.	*les arbres,* m.	the trees.
le bonheur, m.	the happiness.	*aux arbres,*	to the trees.
le malheur, m.	the misfortune.	*de l'enfant,* m.	of the child.
la fenêtre, f.	the window,	*la rue,* f.	the street.
le plafond, m.	the ceiling.	*la fable,* f.	the fable.
le journal, m.	the paper.	*la voix,* f.	the voice.
la cour, f.	the yard.		

EXERCISE.

The *f.* voice of the people.—They have had (of)more misfortunes than we; they have been very unhappy.—This boy has been very good. *m.* wise.)—This king is very powerful with his *pl.* soldiers.—The day *m.* is a *f.* part of the *f.* week.—This *f.* house belongs to thy (uncle's friend.)—God loves all *pl.* (the) men.—The horse that (*acc.*) I have bought is very useful.—The *f.* life of (the) man is short *f.*—A good *m.* king loves his *m. s.* people. *s.*—The *f.* fable that (*acc.*) I have read *f.* is very amusing *f.* for the *pl.* clever *pl.* girls and the *pl.* diligent *pl.* boys.—The *pl.* ceilings of those *pl.* houses are higher *m. pl.* than the trees which *nom.* are in our yard; they *m. pl.* are very low.—This *m.* paper has been read by him.—This *f.* street had twenty houses, and each house had fifteen windows; and the houses had each, *pron f. s.* a *f.* large *f.* yard.

N: B.—The adjectives are fully developed in the Grammar, as well as the verbs.

TREIZIÈME LEÇON.—THIRTEENTH LESSON.

ADVERBES DE QUANTITÉ.—ADVERBS OF QUANTITY.

Peu, few, little.	*Moins,* less, fewer.
Assez, enough.	*Tant,* so much, so many.
Plus, more.	*Autant,* as much, as many.

Beaucoup, much, many, a great deal, a great many. *Combien*, how much, how many. *Trop*, too much, too many.

Beaucoup *de* pain, much bread.
Moins *de* viande, less meat.
Tant *de* poires, so many pears.
Trop *de* cerises, too many cherries.

The above adverbs of quantity always require the preposition (*de*,) before the nouns that follow them, without regard of gender and number.

VOCABULAIRE.

le vin, m.	the wine.	*le café*, m.	the coffe.
la viande, f.	the meat.	*le thé*. m.	the tea.
la bière, f.	the beer.	*le sucre*, m.	the sugar.
l'eau, f.	the water.	*la soupe*, f.	the soup.
le fromage, m.	the cheese.	*bu*, see *boire*,	drunk. p. 136.
le sel, m.	the salt.	*moi*,	I, me, to me.
le poivre, m.	the pepper.	*donnez-moi*,	give (to) me.
la moutarde, f.	the mustard.	*apportez-moi*,	bring (to) me.
le pauvre,	the poor *man*.	*les pauvres*,	the poor *people*.
le riche,	the rich *man*.	*les riches*,	the rich *people*.

When adjectives are used like substantives, the English words *man* or *people*, must not be expressed in French, the article shows at once that the adjective has become a noun.

EXERCISE.

The salt was upon the table with the pepper, the *f.* mustard and the *f.* meat.—He has drunk too much (of) water and to much (of) beer.—Give me some *m.* cheese and (some) *m.* wine.—Those sailors have eaten too much (of) salt; they are sick *pl.*—How many (of) sisters and (of) brothers have you?—Bring me the *f.* mustard and (the) salt. *m.*—There is too much (of) sugar in your tea.—There are more (of) poor *pl.* people in London than in Paris.—There are many (of rich *pl.* people in London.—Has he drunk all *f.* his *f.* beer?—Give me fewer (of) pens and more (of) books.—You have given too much (of) mustard to my little brother.

QUATORZIÈME LEÇON.—FOURTEENTH LESSON.

COMPARATIFS D'ÉGALITÉ.—COMPARATIVES OF EQUALITY

Aussi, as. *Que*, as.

Autant, as much. } *que*, as.
Autant, as many. }

Aussi and *autant* go before the adjectives, and *que* after; *autant de* goes before nouns, and *que de* before the next.

Il est aussi âgé que moi,
He his as old as I.
J'ai autant de poivre que de sel.
I have as much *of* pepper as *of* salt.

REM.—*Je*, I, goes with the verb expressed; *moi*, I, goes where the verbe is not expressed.

(See the Pronouns, Part II.)

VOCABULAIRE.

le morceau, m.	the piece, morsel	*de la toile*, f.	some linen.
le verre, m.	the glass.	*des bas*, m.	some stockings.
la bouteille, f.	the bottle.	*des chemises*, f.	some shirts.
la livre, f.	the pound.	*une cravate*, f.	a cravate.
une aune, f.	a yard.	*un mouchoir*, m.	a handkerchief.
un mètre, m.	a yard.	*des gants*, m.	some gloves.
une paire, f.	a pair.	*des souliers*, m.	some shoes.
une douzaine, f.	a dozen.	*des bottes*, f.	some boots.
une corbeille, f.	a basket.	*des crayons* m.	some pencils.
une tasse, f.	a cup.	*de l'encre*, f.	some ink.
un quintal, m.	hundredweight.	*un coffre*, m.	a chest, trunk.
demi,	a half.	*du papier*, m.	some paper.
une demi-tasse,	half a cup.	*une tasse et demie*,	a cup and a half.

EXERCISE.

They have (some) ink, (some) *pl.* pens, (some) *m.* paper.—My *f.* aunt and (my) uncle have bought five pounds of cheese; it

m. is very good, *m.*—We have drunk (a) *f.* half a bottle of wine.—Give me (a) *f.* half a dozen of gloves and three dozens of shirts.—I have as many (of) gloves as you.—I have received from my sister, (a) *f.* half a dozen of cravats.—In that *m.* trunk *m.* there are three pairs of stockings, five pairs of shirts and two dozens of handkerchiefs.

QUINZIÈME LEÇON.—FIFTEENTH LESSON.

DU PLURIEL DANS LES NOMS.—PLURAL IN NOUNS.

(For the Rules, see Formation of the Plural in Nouns, Part II.)

Nouns ending with *s, x, z*; in the singular, remain the same in the plural.

Those with *au, eu,* take *x* for their plural.

Those with *al, ail,* generally change *al ail,* into *aux.*

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.
le chapeau,	m.	the hat.	*les chapeaux.*
le château,	m.	the castle.	*les châteaux.*
le jeu,	m.	the game.	*les jeux.*
le feu,	m.	the fire.	*les feux.*
le vaisseaux,	m.	the vessel.	*les vaisseaux.*
le troupeau,	m.	the flock.	*les troupeaux.*
le moineau,	m.	the sparrow.	*les moineaux.*
le tablean,	m.	the picture.	*les tabbleaux.*
le couteau,	m.	the knife.	*les couteaux.*
le lion,	m.	the lion.	*les lions.*
le tigre,	m.	the tiger.	*les tigres.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
le cheval,	horse.	*les chevaux,*	horses.
l'animal, m.	animal.	*les animaux,*	animals.
le métal, m.	metal.	*les métaux,*	metals.

le général,	general.	*les généraux.*	generals.
le travail, m.	work.	*les travaux.*	works.

Je lou-e la bonne mère,	I praise the good mother.
Tu lou-es la petite sœur,	Thou praisest the little sister.
Il lou-e les bons enfants,	He praises the good children.
On lou-e le fils,	One praises the son.
Nous lou-ons la nièce,	We praise the niece.
Vous lou-ez ses bons garçons,	You praise his good boys.
Ils lou-ent ces pauvres amis.	They praise these poor friends.

In the following exercise, attention must be paid to the agreement of the adjective with the substantive.

EXERCISE.

The *m.* coffee which *acc.* thou hast bought is very good, *m.*—We praise the *pl.* great works of the *pl.* great *m. pl.* generals.—There are (a great) many (of) animals in the water.—How many (of) horses have they?—My aunt has three paintings in her *f.* house.—Their *s.* King has lost all *pl.* his *pl.* ships.—This *m.* people *s. love* (loves) their (his) *pl.* generals.—The works of those men are agreeable *pl.* to the Queen and to the King.—This King has few (of) soldiers, but many (of) sailors.—You have bought two pounds of good *m.* coffee.—Our *pl.* neighbours have bought *m.* the gardener's trees.—This castle is larger than yours *m. s.*—These flocks are very large *pl.*—You have lost your *pl.* large *pl.* horses. That *f.* little *f.* girl likes (the) *pl.* games.—My cousin has sold his *pl.* two sparrows to his brother.

SEIZIÈME LEÇON.—SIXTEENTH LESSON.

VOCABULAIRE.

le libraire,	the bookseller.	*il vend,*	he sells.
le cordonnier,	the shoemaker.	*on vend,*	one sells, *is sold.*

le menuisier,	the joiner.	*coûté,*	cost.
le charpentier,	the carpenter.	*fait,*	done, made.
le marchand,	the merchant.	*il fait,*	it is, he makes.
le citron, m.	the lemon.	*il coûte,*	it costs.
l'orange, f.	the orange.	*s'il vous plaît,*	if you please, if it (to you) pleases.
en été,	in summer.	*en automne,*	in autumn.
en hiver,	in winter.	*au printemps,*	in the spring.

Il fait chaud en été.	It is warm in summer.
Il fait froid en hiver,	It is cold in winter.
Il fait agréable au printemps,	It is pleasant in the spring.
Il fait beau en automne au Canada.	It is fine in autumn in Canada.
C'est une saison charmante.	It is a delightful season.
Les feuilles de l'érable sont de toute beauté.	The maple leaves are magnificent.

Chez, at the house of,—is always followed by a noun or pronoun of person.

Chez-moi,	at my house.
Chez cet homme,	at that man's.

On, an indefinite pronoun, meaning either *one, you, he they, anybody ;* requires the verb it governs to be in the *third* singular, without exception. It is often translated by the passive voice in English.—See ON, etc., Part II.

On trouve beaucoup de choses chez ce marchand.—People, *or* one finds many things at that merchant's ; *or* many things are found *or* can be found at that merchant's.

Je louais cet homme,	I was praising that man.
Tu louais ces marchands,	Thou wast praising those merchants.
On louait ce cordonnier,	One was praising this shoemaker.
Nous louions ces choses	We were praising those things.
Vous louiez votre libraire,	You were praising your bookseller.

Ces menuisiers louaient les charpentiers.	These joiners were praising the carpenters.

EXERCISE.

The summers of (the) *m.* Canada are very warm *m. pl.*—We praise the autumns above all *f. pl.* the seasons of that *m.* country.—The maple (tree) is a *m.* very useful tree—(people) make 3*d. s.* sugar *m.* (with it.) *en*, before the verb.—Who has made that *f.* good *f.* soup ?—This joiner has made (some *pl.*) tables and three chairs.—These cups have cost (a great deal of) money.—There are many (of) poor *pl.* people, who, *nom.* are very happy.—At that bookseller's, people find 3*d. s.* (some) ink, (some *pl.*) pens, and (some) *pl.* penknives.—Give me, if you please, (some) *f.* meat and (some) *m.* bread.

REMARK.—*DEMI*, half; when before its noun remains invariable; when after, agrees with it in gender only, as : *une demi-heure*, half an hour; *deux heures et demie*, half past two.

DIX-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.—SEVENTEENTH LESSON.

TO LIKE, TO BE FOND OF—THERE IS, THERE ARE.

SUPERLATIVE DEGREE IN ADJECTIVES.

VOCABULAIRE.

le fruit,	m.	the fruit.	*l'Angleterre,*	f.	England.
le lait,	m.	the milk.	*la France,*	f.	France.
le chocolat,	m.	the chocolate.	*l'Asie,*	f.	Asia.
le vinaigre,	m.	the vinegar.	*l'Espagne,*	f.	Spain.
le jambon,	m.	the ham.	*l'Afrique,*	f.	Africa.
le pouding,	m.	the pudding.	*l'Italie,*	f.	Italy.
la farine,	f.	the flour.	*la Chine,*	f.	China.
l'huile,	f.	the oil.	*l'Europe,*	f.	Europe.
les légumes,	m.	the vegetables.	*l'Amérique,*	f.	America.
le fer,	m.	the iron.	*vient*		comes.
la montagne	f.	the mountain.	*le plus riche,*		the richest.

appliqué	m. diligent.	*le moins grand*, the less tall.
aimable,	m. amiable.	*le plus petit*, m. the smallest.
		la plus petite, f. the smallest.

Aimer (to be fond of) requires the article *le, la, l', les* ; to be used before nouns.

J'aime le lait, I like the milk.

Il y a, there is, there are ; and *voici, voilà*, here is, there is, here are, there are.

Il y a, expresses the state, the existence of things or persons following that verb.

Voici, voilà, (prepositions) point out the persons or things placed after those prepositions, and require no verb after.

With *voici, voilà*, you must see the things or persons ; with *il y a* not unless it is further explained, as :

Voici du pain, *Il y a du pain dans l'armoire.*
Here is bread. There is bread in the press.

They may be preceded by the accusative personal pronouns, *me, te, le, la, les, nous vous* :

me voici, here I am. *les voici*, here they are.
never so with *il y a*.

The superlative degree, is formed by placing the article *le, la, l', les* ; or *any possessive* or *determinative* adjective before *moins* or *plus*, which precedes the adjective qualificative.

(For Examples, see Superlatives, Part II.)

EXERCISE.

Tea comes from (the *f.*) China, and coffee from (the) Africa.—(Here are) your *pl.* gloves.—People find 3*d. s.* many (of) good *f. pl.* things *f.* at that joiner's.—This man is poor, but that shoemaker is the poorest man (of) in the town.—The *m.* iron is the most useful of all *pl.* (the) metals which are in the *f.* earth—There are in this *f.* town many (of) merchants who, *nom.* are very rich *pl.*—(The) America is the *m.* largest *m.* country (*pays*) *m*, in the world (of the *m.* world).—(The) *f.* France is larger *f.* than (the) England.—Here is my *m.* largest *m.* boook *m.*

DIX-HUITIEME LEÇON.—EIGHTEENTH LESSON.

SUPERLATIFS ET ADJECTIFS IRRÉGULIERS DE COMPARAISON.—SUPERLATIVES AND ADJECTIVES OF IRREGULAR COMPARISON.

PRONOMS DÉMONSTRATIFS AVEC PRONOMS RELATIFS.—DEMONSTRATIVE WITH RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

The superlative requires the preposition *de* and not *in*, as in English :

L'homme le plus heureux du monde.	The most happy man *in the* world.
La plus haute montagne de l'Europe.	The highest mountain *in* Europe.

bon, m.	good.	*meilleur*, m	better.
mauvais, m.	bad.	*pire*, m. or f.	worse.
petit, m.	small.	*moindre*, do.	smaller.
le meilleur, m.	the best.	*le pire*, m.	the worst.
le moindre, m.	the smallest.		

We also say : *plus mauvais*, worse ; *plus petit*, smaller.

Plus petit, that can be measured.
Moindre, that can be appreciated.

C'est, it is, this is, he is, she is.
Ce sont, it is, they are, these are.

Ce sont, is always followed by a third person plural ; we say : *C'est vous*, it is you ; but, *ce sont eux*, it is they.

C'est, followed by an adjective only, relates to things ; followed by a noun or pronoun, relates to persons or things.

C'est bon,	It is good.
C'est mon meilleur ami,	He is my best friend.
Ce sont les meilleurs enfants du monde.	They are the best children *in* the world.

NOMINATIVE.

He who, the one who or which,	*Celui qui*, m.
She who, the one who or which,	*Celle qui*, f.
Those who, *they* who, the *ones* who or which.	*Ceux qui*, m. pl. *celles qui*, f. pl.

ACCUSATIVE.

Him whom or *which*, the one which,	*Celui que*, m.
Her whom or *which*, the one which,	*Celle que*, f.
Them whom or *which*, the ones which,	*Ceux que*, m. *Celles* [*que*, f.

The above relate to *things* or *persons*.

(See Relative Pronouns. Part II.)

—

Ce qui, that which or what (*Nom.*) } relate to things only;
Ce que, that which or what (*Acc.*) } they are always masc. sing.

EXERCISE.

All pronouns and adjectives must agree in gender and number with the nouns to which they relate.

That young man is very clever, he is the first.—It is the joiner who has made your *pl.* chairs and (your) *pl.* tables.—My *pl.* boots are larger *f. pl.* and better *f. pl.* than his, *f. pl.*; but yours *pl.* are the *pl.* worst *f. pl.* and the smallest *f. pl.*—I love those who are honest *pl.* and diligent *pl.*—He is called William and she is called Louisa.—He is the poorest man (in the) (of the) whole world. —(She is) It is my *f.* best *f.* friend *f.*—The dog is the most faithful animal.—These exercises are very difficult *pl.*; those *m. pl.* that I have are more difficult *pl.* than those *m. pl.* which he has.—That knife *m.* is good *m.*; mine *m.* is better; and the one *m.* which *acc.* he has is the best. *m.*—He who (*nom.*) is here done his *m.* duty.

DIX-NEUVIEME LEÇON.—NINETEENTH LESSON.

ADJECTIFS NUMÉRAUX. —NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

PRONOMS INTERROGATIFS.—INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

Le premier, m.,	the first.	See the numbers given in the *Grammaire.*
La première, f.,	the first.	
Qui, who, whom?		*Dites à mon père,* Tell (to) my father.
De qui, whose, of *or* from whom.		
A qui, whose, to whom.		*Dites-moi,* Tell (to) me.
Chez qui, at whose house.		

1ST. REMARK.—The (*e*) of *le* and (*a*) of *la*, must not be cut off before *onze*, eleven; *onzième*, eleventh; *huit*, eight; *huitième*,, eighth.

2ND.—REMARK.—Instead of *ma, ta, sa;* we use *mon, ton, son;* before nouns in the feminine beginning with a vowel or *h* silent. Ex.: *ton âme*, f., thy soul; *son humanité*, f., his humanity.

VOCABULAIRE.

le garçon,	the boy.	*mesdames,*	ladies.
la fille,	the girl.	*cette demoiselle,*	this young lady.
le domestique,	the servant.	*les demoiselles,*	the young ladies.
la domestique, f.	do.	*mademoiselle,*	miss.
la servante,	the servant girl.	*mesdemoiselles,*	young ladies.
le maître,	the master.	*le médecin,*	the physician.
la classe,	the class.	*modeste,*	modest.
la bonté, f.	the kindness.	*ici,*	here.
la méchanceté, f.	the wickedness.	*là,*	there.
méchant, adj.	bad, naughty.		

le monsieur,	the gentleman.	*Jacques,*	James.
les messieurs,	the gentlemen.	*Frédéric,*	Frederick.
monsieur,	Sir.	*Gustave,*	Gustavus.
messieurs,	gentlemen.	*Genève,*	Geneva.
la dame,	the lady.	*le lac Ontario,*	lake Ontario.
les dames,	the ladies.	*le St. Laurent,*	St. Lawrence.
madame.	madam.	*le fleuve, m.*	large river.

REM.—We cannot say *cette mademoiselle* nor *cette madame*, although we say *ce monsieur, ces messieurs.*

EXERCISE.

They (*ce*) are the servants of this man.—Who are they?—Who* is there?—This *f.* pen belongs to me.—Are you 2*d pl.* the daughters of Mr. Charles?—Tell (to) those ladies that I have found their *s.* little dog and that I have lost mine *m. s.*—These young ladies are very modest *pl.* and very pretty *f. pl.*—(She is) (it is) the wife of the physician.—Whose stockings are these* (turn by): (To whom are these stockings)?—They (*ce*) are mine *m. pl.*—Whose paper *m.* is this?—For whom* are these pears?—For these gentlemen, for these ladies and for these young ladies.—Tell me to whom you have given all *s.* your *s.* fruit *m.*

VINGTIÈME LEÇON.—TWENTIETH LESSON.

SUR LE PRÉSENT ET L'IMPARFAIT DU VERBE *AVOIR*, ACCOMPAGNÉS DES PARTICIPES PASSÉS D'*AVOIR* ET D'*ETRE*.—ON THE PRESENT AND IMPERFECT OF THE VERB *AVOIR*, ACCOMPANIED BY THE PAST PARTICIPLES OF *AVOIR* AND *ETRE*.

Eu, had; *été*, been. See *Avoir* and *Etre*.

VOCABULAIRE.

les parents, m.	the parents, relations.	*lorsque*,	when (at the time.)
l'habit, m.	the coat, dress.	*quand*,	when.
le tailleur,	the tailor.	*parce que*,	because.
le banquier,	the banker.	*alors*,	then, at that time.
le temps, m.	time, weather.	*à présent*,	now, at present.
le nombre, m.	the number.	*rouge*, m. or f.	red, adj.
la pension, f.	school, boarding.	*aveugle*, m. or f.	blind, adj.
la famille, f.	the family.	*cher*, m. *chère*, f.	dear, adj.
		connu,	known.

le matin, m.	the morning,	*hier*,	yesterday.
le soir, m.	the evening.	*aujourd'hui*,	to day.
la visite, f.	the visit, call.	*autrefois*,	formerly.
le tort, m.	the wrong.	*autre*,	other.
la raison, f.	the reason, right.	*une fois*,	once, one time.
la faim, f.	the hunger.	*ensemble*,	together.
la soif, f.	the thirst.	*ordinairement*,	usually, generally.

REM.—*Lorsque* is never used to ask a question, *quand* is.

heureux, m. *heureuse*, f.	happy.
malheureux, m. *malheureuse*, f.	unhappy.
paresseux, m. *paresseuse*, f.	idle.
vertueux, m. *vertueuse*, f.	virtuous.
j'ai fait une visite.	I have made, (paid) a visit.
il fait beau temps,	it is fine weather.

Adverbs follow the verb.

Adjectives ending with (*e*) mute are common to both genders.

Those ending with *x*, change *x* into *se* to form the feminine.

The word *fois*, where there is a repetition of times must be used, and not *temps*.

J'ai été le voir trois fois,	I went three times to see him.
Nous avons passé beaucoup de temps à le faire.	We have spent a great while doing it.

EXERCISE.

Thou wast very young, when thy *f.* mother had (so many) (of) misfortunes.—Have you known my (*pl.*) uncles?—They were known *pl.* by (*de*) every body.—When my *pl.* parents were still rich, *pl.* I had many (of) horses, (of) dogs, and (of) money. —That *f.* young lady was always modest, virtuous, *f.* and diligent, *f.*; she was loved *f.* by (*de*) her *pl.* parents.—(At that time), my uncle was very sad, because he had lost his *f.* daughter, who *nom.* was so (*si*) diligent *f.*—Where were you yesterday?—My brothers

were always in your garden with your *pl.* sisters and theirs *pl.*; and I was always alone in that *m. s.* of the neighbor, because I was unhappy.—He was very amiable.—That man has a son whom *acc.* I have (often[2] seen[1]) at Mrs. Manner's.—My banker was formerly very rich and very happy; now he is very poor and very unhappy.—That *f.* family was formerly very happy *f.*; happier *f.* than yours *f. s.*

VINGT-ET-UNIÈME LEÇON.—TWENTY-FIRST LESSON.

QUELQUES PARTICIPES PASSÉS.—SOME PAST PARTICIPLES.

eu,	had.	*mortel,* m. *mortelle,* f.	mortal.
été,	been, never changes.	*cruel,* m. *cruelle,* f.	cruel.
lu,	read.	*las,* m. *lasse,* f.	tired.
pris,	taken.	*bas,* m. *basse,* f.	low.
mis,	put, laid, placed.	*gros,* m. *grosse,* f.	big, stout.
cherché,	looked for.	*l'affaire,* f.	business, affair.
dit,	told, said, spoken.	*le plaisir,* m.	pleasure.
acheté,	bought.	*le corps,* m.	body.
tout, m. s.	every thing.	*l'âme,* f.	soul.
gomme élastique, f.	india rubber.	*bien,* adverb.	well.

Adjectives whose endings are *el, os, as, on;* double the last consonant and take (*e*) mute.

EXERCISE.

That honest man has lost every thing.—I had put your *pl.* stockings in your *s.* chest; but I have found mine, *m. pl.*, because (*some one*) had taken yours *m. pl.*—The *m.* body of (the) man is mortal, but his *f.* soul is immortal *f.*—She (has) said that we have been very good (wise) *pl.*—We have had much (of) pleasure; we have been at our aunt's the whole day yesterday.—These ladies

are so tired, *f. pl.* because they *f.* have looked for the dog that (*acc.*) they *f.* had 3*rd pl.* lost yesterday.—I have* sent Henry to my banker's to-day; he is very tired now.—Have you (a great) deal of business* *pl.* to-day?—I have read the *f.* letter which* (*acc*) you have lent *f.* to Henry; it *f.* is well written *f.*—Where hast thou put my *f.* pen?

VINGT-DEUXIEME LEÇON.—TWENTY-SECOND LESSON.

NÉGATIONS ET ADJECTIFS AVEC DES VERBES.—NEGATIVES AND ADJECTIVES WITH VERBS.

actif, m. *active*, f.	active.	*ne*,	*pas*,	not.
vif, m. *vive*, f.	quick, lively.	*ne*,	*jamais*,	never.
neuf, m. *neuve*, f.	new, (not worn.)	*ne*,	*rien*,	nothing, not any thing.
neuf, nine.	does not change.	*ne*,	*personne*,	no body, not any one.
beau, m. *belle*, f.	fine, beautiful.	*ne*,	*plus*,	no more.

nouveau,	m.	*nouvelle*,	f.	new, (not seen before.)
faux,	m.	*fausse*,	f.	false, deceitful.
doux,	m.	*douce*,	f.	sweet, mild.
frais,	m.	*fraîche*,	f.	fresh.
vieux,	m.	*vieille*,	f.	old.
sec,	m.	*sèche*,	f.	dry.
blanc,	m.	*blanche*,	f.	white.
long,	m.	*longue*,	f.	long.

Je n'avais pas,	I had not.
Tu n'auras jamais.	Thou shalt never have.
Il n'a rien,	He has nothing.
On n'aime personne,	One does not like any one.
Nous ne louons jamais,	We never praise.
Vous ne parlez point,	You do not speak at all.
Ils ne donnent rien,	They give nothing.

la brebis, f.	the sheep.	*non,*	no.
la chèvre, f.	the goat.	*oui,*	yes.
le beurre, m.	the butter.	*si,*	yes, of course, if, so.

After *Avoir* negatively, *d'* or *de,* is used, irrespective of gender and number, before the noun in a partitive sense placed after that verb, as :

Je n'ai pas de pain,	I have not any bread.
Elles n'ont point de mère,	They have no mother.
Nous n'avons point d'assiettes,	We have no plates.

But, *J'ai du pain,* because it is not negative.

Rien, personne, quelque chose m., require *de* before the adjective.

Il n'a rien de bon, He has nothing good.

Adjectives ending in *f* change *f* into *ve,* for the feminine.

The English negatives *not, never, nothing, nobody;* must be expressed in French by the particle (*ne*) placed before the verb, and just after the nominative, and *pas, point, jamais, personne, rien;* after the verb; and in compound tenses before the past participle.

It must always be borne in mind that a negative verb cannot be without the particle *ne.*

EXERCISE.

Have you any fresh[2] *f.* water[1] ?—Give me if you please some *m.* fresh[2] *m.* butter[1].—This woman is old *f.* and that man is old *m.* also.—These apples are much sweeter *f. pl.* than *pl.* those pears.—The *m.* cat is deceitful, but the *f.* sheep is mild *f.*—This *f.* chair is too low *f.*—I have never seen the King, and my brother has not yet seen the Queen.—We have paid (made) a *f.* visit to William; he is very ill.—The *f.* sheep is not so lively *f.* as the *f.* goat.—Many (of) books are not useful *pl.*—These poor *pl.* women are blind *pl.*—The *pl.* houses in (of) Paris are higher *f. pl.* than those *f. pl.* in (of) London.—We have not read your *pl.*

letters ; they *f. pl.* are very long *f. pl.*—You are not unhappy, you have not lost your *pl.* pa ents.—You *m. pl.* are not diligent, you have not written any exercises.

VINGT-TROISIEME LEÇON.—TWENTY-THIRD

VOCABULAIRE.

la fourchette, f.	the fork.	*copié*,	copied.
la cuillère, f.	the spoon.	*dormi*,	slept.
la main, f.	the hand.	*commencé*,	begun.
les cheveux, m.pl.	the hair.	*cherché*,	looked for.
la barbe, f.	the beard.	*longtemps*, adv.	a long time.
la poste, f.	the post-office.	*peu de temps*,	a short time,
le cahier, m.	the copy-book.	*la carte*, f.	the map.

Rem.—In interrogative sentences, the nominative, if a pronoun, goes after the verb :

Auraient-ils fait cette mauvaise action, s'ils avaient réfléchi à la punition qui suit toujours un crime ?

Would they have performed that bad action, had they thought of the punishment always attending crime.

If negative, the particle (*ne*) precedes the verb :

Ne vous avais-je pas cherché ? Had I not looked for you ?

If there be a past participle with auxiliary, the second negative goes between the auxiliary and the past participle. The *e* of *ne* must be cut off before a vowel :

N'a-t-elle pas bien dormi ? Did she not sleep well ?

2nd. Rem.—Most adjectives follow their respective nouns ; but *bon, mauvais, petit, grand, beau, long ;* go generally before.

EXERCISE.

Here are my *pl.* children.—Are we not diligent *pl.* ?—Nobody likes this *f.* naughty *f.* girl.—We were not here yesterday ; we

have seen nobody.—This poor child has (not) eaten (anything) nothing.—When have they begun their *pl.* tasks?—We* have sent the servant to the shoemaker's, because we have not any (of) shoes.—Have you sent the servant to the *f.* post-office?—I have slept (a long time in the *f.* class-*room.*)—Who has* slept in my *f.* room.—Francis has received a *m.* new penknife and a *f.* new *f.* watch.—Henry has given (to) my brother an *f.* apple which is very sweet *f.*—The *f.* beard of this old soldier is very long *f.*—The *m.* ham which (*acc.*) you have received is not fresh, *m.*; but this *f.* meat is very fresh *f.*—That *f.* young lady has two white[1] *pl.* cats.[2]—They *m.* are very dear *m. pl.*—My *f.* mother has bought a *f.* dozen (of) shirts and (of) handkerchiefs.—These girls are not naughty *f. pl.*; they *f. pl.* have not taken our *pl.* pens.—One (*On*) is not virtuous, when one does not love his *pl.* parents.

VINGT-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.—TWENTY-FOURTH LESSON.

SUR QUELQUES PARTICIPES PASSÉS CONJUGUÉS AVEC *ETRE*, ET SUR QUELQUES EXPRESSIONS IDIOMATIQUES.

ON SOME PAST PARTICIPLES CONJUGATED WITH *ETRE*, AND ON SOME IDIOMATICAL EXPRESSIONS.

Je suis arrivé, I arrived, did arrive, have arrived.
Tu es allé, thou wentest, didst go, hast gone.
Il est resté, he remained, did remain, has remained.
Elle est sortie, she went out, did go out, has gone out.
Nous sommes partis, we went away, did set out, have set off.
Vous êtes venus, you came, did come, have come.
Elles sont venues, they came back, did come back, have come back.

VOCABULAIRE.

l'heure, f.	the hour.	*le vent*, m.	the wind.
l'âge, m.	the age.	*la semaine passée, dernière*, f.	last week.
le voyage, m.	the voyage.	*minuit*, m.	midnight.
la leçon, f.	the lesson.	*midi* m.	noon ; (never *dòuze heures.*)
la minute, f.	the minute.	*un an*, m.	a year.
le quart, m.	the quarter.	*quinze jours*, m.	a fortnight, 15 days.
		huit jours, m.	a week, 8 days.

Quelle heure est-il ? What time is it ?

Quel, m. *quelle*, f. *quels*, m. pl. *quelles*, f. pl. ; which, what ?

Combien, and a noun of time, followed by *il y a que*, requires a present tense.

Combien de temps y a-t-il que vous êtes ici. { How much (of) time is there since you are here ? (*Eng.*) How long have you been here ?

Depuis quand, followed by a verb, requires a present tense.

Depuis quand êtes-vous au Canada ? { Since when are you in Canada ? (*Eng.*) How long have you been in Canada.

Il y a, followed by a noun of time, adverb of time and *que*, requires a past tense to express the past, and a present tense to express something actually present.

Il y a is also translated by *it is*, and *que* by *since*.

Il y a longtemps que j'y suis. { There is a long time since I am in it. (*Eng.*) I have been a long time in it.

Il y a, followed by a noun of time, means also *ago*.

Il y a deux ans, Two years ago.

Quel âge avez-vous ? How old are you ?
Not so good, *Quel est votre âge ?* What is your age ?
Quel âge ont-ils ? How old are they ?

☞ Never turn *there is, there are,* by the verb *être* as in English—always with *avoir* and *y* before.

Il y avait beaucoup de monde,
There were many people.

There was, there, were, *Il y avait.*

Was there ? } *Y avait-il ?* Is there ? } *Y a-t-il ?*
Were there ? Are there ?

(See *y avoir,* Part II.)

EXERCISE.

My uncle (set out) (is set out) three days ago.—(How old is he ?) (What age has he ?) How long have you been in (at) Toronto ?—We went to the shoemaker's ; he has not made my *pl.* new[2] *f. pl.* boots[1].—I have (am) returned very tired.—With whom did you come ?—When have (are) you returned from your journey ?—You came (are come) a little too soon ; the ladies and the gentlemen have (are) not yet arrived *m. pl.*—My trunks have (are) not arrived *m. pl.*—Has she not yet written ?—I have sent my *m.* servant to the *f* post-office this *m.* morning, but he has not received any (of) letters.—There were not any (of) letters.—Was I not formerly the most happy man in (of) the *m.* World *m.*—Have they *f.* not been the *pl.* first *f. pl* ?—Here are your *pl.* sisters ; have they *f.* not been (a long time) in (at) Paris ?—Have you been at the physician's to day ?

VINGT-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.—TWENTY-FIFTH LESSON.

FUTUR ET CONDITIONNEL.—FUTURE AND CONDITIONAL.

ENDINGS.

Future.				Conditional.			
Sing.		Pl.		Sing.		Pl.	
1.	*rai,*	1.	*rons,*	1.	*rais,*	1.	*rions,*
2.	*ras,*	2.	*rez,*	2.	*rais,*	2.	*riez,*
3.	*ra,*	3.	*ront.*	3.	*rait,*	3,	*raient.*

The terminations of the future and conditional are common to all verbs without any exceptions. They represent the English *shall* and *will*, and *would*, *should* and *could*.

1. After (*si*) if, and the imperfect indicative, we use the present conditional.

Si j'étais malade, je sortirais. If I were ill, I would go out.

2. After *si*, if; and the present indicative, we use the future absolute.

Si je puis, je le ferai. If I can, I will do it.

3. After *quand*, when; to express something to come, always use the future; and the present indicative to express a habit.

Je parlerai quand vous aurez fini. I shall speak, when you have done. *J'ouvre la bouche quand je parle.* I open my mouth when I speak.

See *avoir*, *être*, *chanter*, *choisir*, etc., Part II.

EXERCISE.

Our father (*has*) said that we would have another servant soon —They would not (*have*) (be) come *pl.* if they had not received our letter.—If he had found nobody, he would have (be) gone to his friend's house.—If thou hadst more (of) friends thou wouldst be more happy.—We would have (be) gone *pl.* to our uncle's, if we had received a *f.* good *f.* letter.—You shall soon have no more (of) money.—These boys will become (be) idle, *pl.*, when they

have (shall have) no more (of) lessons.—At what *f.* o'clock (hour) will you be at my uncle's.—How old is your cousin ?—He (will be) (shall have) ten years old in a few *pl.* days.—Shall I not have the beautiful penknife *m.* that (*acc.*) my father has bought.—My *f.* sister will be pleased *f.*, when she has (shall have) done her *m.* exercise.—Tell (to) the servant (that) I will be in my *f.* room.

N. B.—Mind the agreement of the adjectives with the nouns, in gender and number.

VINGT-SIXIÈME LEÇON.—TWENTY-SIXTH LESSON.

VERBES EMPLOYÉS INTERROGATIVEMENT AVEC DES SUBSTANTIFS.—VERBS USED INTERROGATIVELY WITH NOUNS.

PREMIERE CONJUGAISON.—FIRST CONJUGATION

Infinitives of the verbs of the first conjugation ending with *er*, what precedes *er* is called the root of the verb.

The root should never change ; the ending is to show the number, person, tense or mood.

INFINITIVE PRESENT.	regular endings :	*er.*
PRESENT PARTICIPLE.		*ant.*
PAST PARTICIPLE.		*é.*

parl-er,	to speak.	*cherch-er,*	to look for.
parl-ant,	speaking.	*aim-er,*	to like, to love.
parl-é,	spoken.	*pens-er,* (*à*)	to think (of)
montr-er,	to show.	*port-er,*	to carry.
oubli-er,	to forget.	*donn-er,*	to give.
gât-er,	to spoil.	*écout-er,*	to listen to.
cess-er,	to cease, to leave off.	*Français,*	French, or man.
prêt-er,	to lend.	*Anglais,*	English, or "
apporter,	to bring.	*Allemand,*	German.

REM.—If you want to make a verb interrogative, with a noun for its nominative, the noun comes first, then the verb, and then the personal pronoun of the same gender and the number as the noun, as :

L'avocat a-t-il parlé ? Has the lawyer spoken ?

With *est-ce que*, the order of the words remains.

Est-ce que l'avocat a parlé ? Has the lawyer spoken ?

The words *do, did, will, shall, would, should, might* and *may ;* are never translated into French; they answer to the terminations of the different tenses of the French verbs : for, as in English, they mean nothing without the verb, when used as auxiliaries to it. For example :

Did you do that ?	*Avez-vous fait cela ?*
Would you give it ?	*Le donneriez-vous ?*

EXERCISE.

Do our *p.* masters show our *pl.* (copy books) to our *pl.* parents.—Does not this merchant sell three dozen of handkerchiefs for one *f.* pound.—These horses belong to thoso gentlemen.—We will leave off at one *f.* o'clock (hour.)—Wo always speak French.—We do not show our money to that bad man.—Why do you not leave off ?—Do the generals love their *pl.* soldiers ?—Did I forget this old soldier ?—You never speak of your *pl.* affairs ?—Do we love the children of the neighbour who has given (so many) (of) apples to our *pl.* girls ?—They think but little *of* (to) the *pl.* tasks that (*acc.*) they have to do.—Do these mothers always speak of their *pl.* children *pl.* with pleasure ?—What have you looked (for).—Have they thought (of) (to) my books ?—Shall you always be (the) first ?—Has your neighbour sold his *f.* house ?—Would not those gentlemen be rich *pl.* if they had been as active *pl.* as at present.

VINGT-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.—TWENTY-SEVENTH LESSON.

SUR L'IMPARFAIT DE L'INDICATIF, LE FUTUR ET LE CONDITIONNEL.—ON THE IMPERFECT OF THE INDICATIVE, FUTURE AND CONDITIONAL.

DE LA PREMIERE CONJUGAISON.—OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

	SING.	PLUR.
Terminations of the imperfect are always:	1. *ais.*	1. *ions.*
	2. *ais.*	2. *iez.*
	3. *ait.*	3. *aient.*

These answer to the English *was* or *were* with present participle; or *to did, used to*, with the verb; as

Il mangeait bien, dormait de même, et travaillait le moins qu'il pouvait.

He *used to* or *did* eat well, slept as well, and used to work as little as he could.

IDIOMS.

Il est une heure. It is one o'clock.

Quoi encore? What else?

Dans quelle rue et à quel numéro demeurez-vous? In what street and at what number do you live?

Monter une pendule. To wind a clock.

Retarder. To be slow. } In speaking of watches, clocks.
Avancer. To go fast. }

Mettre à la voile. To set sail. *Elle retarde.* It is slow.
Mis à la voile. Set sail.

EXERCISE.

How much (of) money will you give to the *pl.* poor *pl.*—I would think of (to) your *pl.* affairs and of (to) mine *f. pl.* if I were not so idle.—If I spoke as often as you, I would speak very well.—(Were you showing) your *pl.* shoes to the shoe-

maker?—The physicians spoke 3*rd pl.* of my cousin who was very ill.—We often looked for our *pl.* friends.—If I had known that this *m.* knife belonged* to you, I would have said that I had found your knife.—My *pl.* children did not like (the) *f.* study; they (used to play) a great deal.—Thy cousin (was looking) for his *m.* hat, when we (are) left *pl.*—That *m* people *s.* loved* their (its) King.—Formerly (I used to like) (the) *m.* play, but now I* like (the) *pl.* books.—At what time did you carry this *m.* book to your uncle?—Did you (use to) live in that place?—Were you speaking of him or of her?—Did the Englishman lend that stick which *acc.* he had, to those who, *nom.* asked 3*d. pl.* (*to*) him?—Were you thinking of (to) me, when I (am) arrived?—Were you living at (the) *m.* number forty-five, when you were here?—Was not this clock slow?—No, it was fast—Did you (use to) forget to wind it every evening before going (of to go) to (the) bed?—Excuse me, we were setting sail, as the *m.* other boat arrived.

VINGT-HUITIÈME LEÇON.—TWENTY-EIGHTH LESSON.

VOCABULAIRE.

chant-er,	to sing.	*dans-er,*	to dance.
jou-er,	to play.	*porter,*	to carry.
blâm-er,	to blame.	*déjeun-er,*	to breakfast.
travaill-er,	to work.	*pleur-er,*	to weep.
entr-er,	to come in.	*dîn-er,*	to dine.
trouv-er,	to find.	*demand-er,*	to ask for.
men-er,	to take, lead.	*coût-er,*	to cost.
quelque part,	some where.	*demeur-er,*	to dwell, to live.

To play (on the) violin,	*Jouer du violon.*
To play (on the) piano,	*Toucher du piano.*
To touch (of the) piano,	" "

le drap, m.	the cloth.	*comment?*	how?
la flûte, f	the flute.	*noir*,	black.
la guitare, f.	the guitar.	*se porter.*	to be, to do, to carry oneself.

Mener, to take persons; *porter*, to take things or persons by carrying.

Menez cette demoiselle à l'église, Take this young lady to church.
Portez ces habits chez le tailleur, Take these clothes to the tailor's.

Comment vous portez-vous? { How do you do? / How do you carry yourself?

Je me porte bien. { I am well. / I carry myself well.

Comment se porte votre ami? { How is your friend? / How does your friend carry himself?

EXERCISE.

How long has he dwelt in the *f.* same city? I do not know.—I would give a *f.* new *f.* flute to that child, if he played well.—Would you lend ten shillings to your friend, if he had not any (of) money?—I live at my aunt's.—What do these glasses cost?—Will your servant carry all *m. s.* this *m.* cloth?—He does not live here any more.—Do you still live here?—Do you sing.—My brother was singing, my sister was playing on the *m.* piano, and we were dancing.—If you are always idle, you will always be poor.—Do your *pl.* sisters listen *to* their *pl.* masters, when they *m.* speak?—Why do you cry?—Because the master (has) said that I was very naughty.—We generally dine at half past five (hours) and we breakfast at half past seven (hours) in (of) the *m.* morning.—This *m.* violin costs one *f.* pound and a half *f*, and this *f.* flute half *m.* a. *f.* pound.

VINGT-NEUVIEME LEÇON.—TWENTY-NINTH LESSON.

VERBES DE LA SECONDE CONJUGAISON.—VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

INFINITIVE.	regular endings:	*fin–ir,*	to finish.
PRESENT PARTICIPE.		*fin–issant,*	finishing.
PAST PARTICIPLE.		*fin–i,*	finish.

What precedes (*ir*) being the root and *ir* the ending, it will be easy to recognise the different terminations as given in the verbs. See *Choisir*, Part II.

ag–ir,	to act.	*obéir* requires (*à*) after it.
pun–ir,	to punish.	*Nous obéissons à notre maître.*
chois–ir,	to choose.	We obey (*to*) our masters.
obé–ir,	to obey.	
bât–ir,	to build.	*Vers,* towards, physically.
rempl–ir,	to fill, fulfil.	*Envers,* towards, morally.
pér–ir,	to perish.	*Devoir,* m. (noun), duty, task.

Cet enfant se conduit bien envers ses maîtres,	This child behaves well (towards) to his masters.
Ils vont vers la rivière,	They go towards the river.

EXERCISE.

Every body was always pleased with (of) me.—Formerly I used to work well; I never used to play with my *pl.* friends; I never was punished by my *pl.* masters.—This *f.* nation would love their (its) King, if he were (had) more right.—I have built three houses, it (this) is enough.—When will you take your sister to the *m.* ball.—I will choose the *pl.* best *m.* *pl.* books.—They would be (have) right, if they punished the lazy[2] *pl.* boys[1]. (Not anything) is always translated by (*ne*) before the verb and *rien* after or before *ne* and the verb.—One does not give any-

thing to these poor *pl.* soldiers.—Which *m.* violin would you choose ?—He would have finished to day, if he had not been idle. —This rich man (is building) builds (some) *pl.* castles and (some) *pl.* houses.—Which *m. pl.* good *m. pl.* books have you chosen *pl.* There is to little (of) wine in these bottles.—Does this boy obey (to) his masters ?—We do not build 1*st pl.*, because we have not any (of) money.—I never punish that young man, because he is always diligent.—These gentlemen do not always fulfil 3*d. pl.* their *pl.* duties.

TRENTIEME LEÇON.—THIRTIETH LESSON.

VERBES DE LA TROISIEME CONJUGAISON.—VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

INFINITIVE,	*evoir.*	Regular terminations.
PRESENT PARTICIPLE,	*evant.*	
PAST PARTICIPLE,	*u.*	

aperc-evoir,	to perceive.	*aperc-evant,*	perceiving.
conc-evoir,	to conceive, understand.	*conc-evant,*	conceiving.
rec-evoir,	to receive,	*rec-evant,*	receiving.
perc-evoir,	to collect taxes.	*perc-evant,*	collecting.
déc-evoir,	to deceive.	*déc-evant,*	deceiving.
d-evoir,	to owe. / to be to.	*d-evant,*	owing.

PAST PARTICIPLES.

aperç-u,	perceived.	*perç-u,*	collected.
conç-u,	conceived.	*déç-u,*	deceived.
reç-u,	received	*d-û.*	owed

REM.—Verbs ending with *cevoir*, take a little mark under the (ç) before the vowels *o*, *u*, to make the *c* soft.

3RD. conjugation given in the Part II.

The French have another way of making a verb interrogative, it is by placing *est-ce que* or *est-ce qu'*, before *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles on* ; or before any nouns followed by the verb ; and *est-ce que* will answer to the English *do, did*, etc., as :

(*Est-ce que*) *nous devons partir ?*
(?) we (are to) (set off.)
Are we to set off ?

Est-ce que cet homme juste a fait son possible?
Did that just man do is best ?

EXERCISE.

At what *f.* time (hour) (were we to set off) this *m.* morning? —All *m. pl.* those *m. pl.* who have 3*rd. pl.* received (some) *pl.* presents from the king, have been well recompensed *pl.*—The generals would collect 3*rd. pl.* the dues (*droits*) of the King, if they were more honest *pl.*—It *m.* is not so fine *m.* as that *m.* which (*acc.*) I had yesterday.—I find that this *m.* black *m.* cloth is is not so fine *m.* as that *m.* white *m.* cloth. How much do you say that this *m.* cloth costs ?—It *m.* costs one *f.* pound *a* (the) *f.* yard.—If this was for me, I would choose (this one) *m.*—Would you receive as much (of) money as that merchant, if you gave (some) *m.* cheese, (some) *m.* bread and (some) *f.* meat to the soldiers and (to the) sailors of the King ?—(I was to set) off (I ought) to day, but I was not ready.—I would give a *m.* piece of ham to that child, if it was good.—I would receive that *m.* money with pleasure.—Do you perceive something in that *f.* room ?

TRENTE-ET-UNIEME LEÇON.—THIRTY-FIRST LESSON.

VERBES DE LA QUATRIEME CONJUGAISON.—VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION.

INFINITIVE,	*re.*	Regular terminations.
PRES. PARTICIPLE,	*ant.*	
PAST PARTICIPLE,	*u.*	

vend-	*re,*	to sell.	*vend-*	*ant,*	selling.
entend-	*re,*	to hear.	*entend-*	*ant,*	hearing.
attend-	*re,*	to wait for.	*attend-*	*ant,*	waiting.
descend-	*re,*	to come down.	*descend-*	*ant,*	coming down.
répond-	*re,*	to answer.	*répond-*	*ant,*	answering.
rend-	*re,*	to return.	*rend-*	*ant,*	returning.
perd-	*re,*	to lose.	*perd-*	*ant,*	losing.
pend-	*re,*	to hang.	*pend-*	*ant,*	hanging.

PAST PARTICIPLES.

vend-	*u,*	sold.	*répond-*	*u,*	answered.
entend-	*u,*	heard.	*rend-*	*u,*	returned.
attend-	*u,*	waited for.	*perd-*	*u,*	lost.
descend-	*u,*	come down.	*pend-*	*u,*	hanged.

Trouver, to find, with *comment,* means how do you like :

Comment trouvez-vous cela ? How do you like that ? never *comment aimez-vous.*

Comment aimez-vous, would be used in the sense of : how would you have something prepared, as :

Comment aimez-vous le bœuf ? How do you like beef ?
Aux oignons ou à l'huile ? With onions or oil ?

Voler, to steal. } *pendre* (*à.*)
Voler, to fly in the air. } to hang (from.)

(Verbs of the fourth conjugation will be found in the Grammar, Part II.)

VOCABULAIRE.

le village, m.	the village.	*allez*,	go.
le mur, m.	the wall.	*venez*,	come.
la porte, f.	the door.	*vrai*, m. *vraie*, f.	true.
le prix, m.	the price, prize.	*vite*,	quickly.
la musique, f.	the music.	*doucement*,	slowly, gently.
à la mode,	fashionable.	*fin*, m. *fine*, f.	fine, (in texture)
vert, m. *verte*, f.	green.	*depuis*,	since.
très-content,	very much pleased.	*dès*,	since, from.

EXERCISE.

If they *do* not arrive this morning, they will arrive to-morrow. These pictures hang 3*d. pl.* from (at) the wall.—Who has hanged his *m.* hat from (at) the *m.* wall.—I will answer in (a few) *pl.* days.—Have you already answered (to) his *pl.* letters ?—Yes, and I have received two letters from our friend William, who is in (at) Paris.—Where do you go ?—If I was not ill, I would come down.—Why did you not wait ?—We (are coming) come down and my sister also.—These children never answer, 3*d. pl.* when they are very much pleased *pl.*—What has your neighbour lost ?—You walk very slowly.—We do not look for anything, because we have not lost anything.—We (*have been waiting*) have waited for more than (of) an *f.* hour.—The *pl.* other *pl.* merchants in (of the) *m.* village sell 3*rd. pl.* their cloth very dear. —The tailor (has) said that (the) *m.* green is no more fashionable.—How do you like this *m.* cloth ?

TRENTE-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.—THIRTY-SECOND LESSON.

REMARQUES SUR QUELQUES VERBES DE LA PREMIERE CONJUGAISON.—REMARKS UPON SOME VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

Verbs ending with *cer* and *ger* in the infinitive.

Those ending with (*cer*) take a cedilla under the (*ç*), when that (*c*) comes before (*a*, *o*.)

Those with (*ger*) take (*e*) mute after the (*g*), when that (*g*) comes before (*a*, *o*), as :

Nous pronon(ç)ons, We pronounce.
Nous partag(e)ons, We share or divide.

commencer,	to begin,	*manger,*	to eat.
effacer,	to erase, strike out.	*corriger,*	to correct.
rincer,	to rinse.	*changer,*	to change.
avancer,	to advance.	*partager,*	to share, divide.
placer,	to place.	*protéger,*	to protect.
prononcer,	to pronounce.		

VOCABULAIRE.

le mot, m. / *la parole,* f.	the word, chiefly written. / the word, speech, spoken.	*parmi,*	among, (more than two) in the midst of
le grec, m.	the greek,	*entre,*	between, among.
le souverain,	the sovereign.	*mieux,*	better (more well.)
le prince,	the prince.	*autrement,*	otherwise.
l'étude, f.	the study.	*bien,*	well or very.
l'innocence, f.	the innocence.	*connaître,*	to know, to be acquainted.
le latin, m.	the latin.		
la ligne, f.	the line.	*savoir,*	by learning, to know.
Je connais,	I know.	*Je sais,*	I know.

Connaître, cannot be followed by *que* ; *savoir,* can :

Je sais qu'il est arrivé, I know he has arrived.

Je connais cela or *je sais cela;* though with a different meaning.

REM.—After *mieux, autrement, plus, moins ;* the French use the particle *ne* before the verb, as :

Il écrit mieux qu'il ne *parle,* He writes better than he speaks.

EXERCISE.

They buy some thing every day for their *pl.* children who (*nom.*) are at (the) *f.* school.—These men and (these) women change (*their*) (of) stockings every *pl.* day *pl.* ; they are very rich *pl.*—The weather in (of) this *m.* country changes very often. —They have written better, *adv.* than they (*ne*) have spoken. —The *pl.* English pronounce (the) *m.* Greek better, *adv.* than the French ; but they do not pronounce (the) Latin so well.—The *pl.* English pronounce (the) *m.* Latin otherwise than the French.—Rub out all *f. pl.* these lines.—The servant has rinsed all *m. pl.* the *pl.* glasses.—The bankers change (some) *m.* silver for (some) *m.* gold.—God protects our country and (our) King.—We will begin our lesson, when our turn (*comes*) (will come,) otherwise we will not begin.—At what *f.* time (hour) will you dine ?—Don't erase this *f.* line. We generally divide (that which) see p. 36 (*acc.*) we have.—When will the master correct my *f.* task ?—When he (*hast done*) (shall have done) my book.—My sister understands (the) *m.* Greek and (the) *m.* latin.—The *pl.* French do not pronounce all *f. pl.* their *pl.* letters.—We never correct the exercises of our *pl.* children.—The study (of the) *m.* Latin is difficult.

TRENTE-TROISIÈME LEÇON.—THIRTY-THIRD LESSON.

The following :

épeler,	to spell.	*j'épelle*	I spell.
appeler,	to call.	*appelle,*	
atteler,	to put horses to.	*attelle,*	
dételer,	to unyoke.	*dételle,*	
jeter,	to throw.	*jette,*	

double their (*l*) or (*t*) before the mute syllable (*e, es, e, ent.*)

The following :

achever,	to finish	*j'achève,* I finish.	Do not double the consonant, but take a (`) grave accent over the (*e*), preceding a mute syllable.
peler,	to peel.	*pèle,*	
acheter,	to buy.	*achète,*	
peser,	to weigh.	*pèse,*	
lever,	to raise.	*lève,*	
mener,	to take, (lead.)	*mène,*	
se lever,	to get, up, rise,	*il se lève ;*	

These others change the (*é*) into (*è*), when before a mute syllable :

espérer,	to hope.	*j'espère,* I hope.
céder,	to yield, give up.	*cède,*
exagérer,	to exagerate.	*exagère,*
modérer,	to moderate.	*modère,*
posséder,	to possess.	*possède,*
régler,	to regulate.	*règle,*
règner,	to rule, reign.	*règne,*
préférer,	to prefer.	*préfère ;* and

payer,	to pay.	*je paie,* I pay.	Change the (*y*) of the infinitive into (*i*), when before (*e, es e, ent,*) called mute. (See No. 88, Part II.)
ployer,	to bend.	*ploie,*	
ennuyer,	to tire, weary,	*enuuie,*	
envoyer,	to send.	*envoie*	
essayer,	to try.	*essaie.*	
essuyer,	to wipe.	*essuie,*	
employer,	to employ.	*emploie,*	
effrayer,	to frighten.	*effraie,*	
nettoyer,	to clean.	*nettoie,*	
aboyer,	to bark.	*aboie,*	

VOCABULAIRE.

la colère,	f.	the anger.	*en colère,*		in a passion.
le défaut,	m.	defect, fault.	*en défaut,*		at fault.
la fortune,	f.	the fortune.	*par amitié,*		in a friendly way
l'amitié,	f.	the friendship.	*la canne,*	f.	walking stick.
la larme,	f.	the tear.	*le chemin,*	m.	the road.
la sagesse,	f.	the wisdom.	*la fourchette,*	f.	the fork.
la faute,	f.	the fault, the mistake.	*la main,*	f.	the hand.
			le poing,	m.	the fist.

TRENTE-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.—THIRTY-FOURTH LESSON.

SOME OR ANY, WITH NOUNS.

Some or *any*, generally represented by *du, de, la, de l' des ;* is often changed into (*de*), when there comes any qualificative adjective before the noun, or again if the noun, taken in a partitive sense, is governed by a verb negative, without regard to gender or number, as :

J'ai d'*excellentes poires,*	I have excellent pears.
Je n'ai pas de *poires,*	I have no pears.

VOCABULAIRE.

l'église, f.	the church.	*la défense*, f.	the prohibition.
le concert, m.	the concert.	*au concert*,	at the concert.
le théâtre, m.	the theatre.	*au théâtre*,	at the theatre.
la place, f.	place, square.	*au bal*,	at the ball.
le lac, m.	the lake.	*les mois*, m.	the months.
la mer, f.	the sea.	*les siècles*, m.	the centuries.
la rivière, f.	the river.	*les poissons*, m.	the fishes.
le fleuve, m.	do (larger.)	*les prunes*, f.	the plums.
les saisons, f.	the seasons.	*les pêches*, f.	the peaches.

'eau-de-vie, f. brandy, (*water of the vine*), *aqua vitis.*

Je crois que oui,	I think so.	*Je le crois*,	I believe so.
Je crois que non,	I think not.	*Je le veux bien*,	I will, I am very willing.

EXERCISE.

Spell this *m.* word if you please.—Why do you throw your *f.* pen ?—Because *it* (she) is not good *f.*—Our master is in (a passion) because we have not done our *pl.* tasks to-day.—Where does that *m.* road lead (*to*).—I hope that you will have much (of) pleasure in (at) the *f.* country.—Call my dog which (*nom.*) is in the *f.* room.—This *m.* drawing is well done.—I will pay (*for*) the shoes that I have bought *pl.* the other day.—(The) *f.* wisdom is a *m.* gift of (the) *f.* nature.—His writing is very fine *f.*—Children, employ 2*d pl.* your time well, if you wish (*voulez*) (*to*) become learned *pl.*—(The) *f.* anger is a *m.* bad defect.—We try (*to*) (of) please (*plaire*) (to) those whom (*acc.*) we love.—Do you prefer (the) *m.* coffee to (the) *m.* tea ?—I like both (the one *m.* and the other).—Why does your cousin *f.* wipe her *pl.* tears ?—Has she been naughty *f.* ?—No Sir ; somebody has thrown something (*at her*) (on the *f.* head.)—Rule your (copy book), you don't write straight.—How many (of) French books have you (*got*) ?—This *f.* river is filled *f.* with (of) water and

(of) fishes ; *it* (she) is very large *f.*—A *m.* lake is sometimes less broad than a *f.* river.—The seasons of this *m.* country are very short *f. pl.* ; because the winter is the *f.* longest *f.* season.

TRENTE-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.—THIRTY-FIFTH LESSON.

PRONOMS PERSONNELS QUI PRÉCEDENT LES VERBES

PERSONAL PRONOUNS WHICH PRECEDE VERBS.

1.

me, me, to me.
te, thee, to thee.
se, himself, herself, to himself, to themselves.
nous, us, to us.
vous, you, to you.
leur, to them.
lui, to him, to her.
en, of it, of them, of him, of her, some, any ; *with verbs.*
y, to it, to him, to them.
le, him, it.
la, her, it.
les, them.

Il me voit,	He sees me.
Je te parle,	I speak to thee.
Elle se flatte,	She flatters herself.
Je lui donne cela,	I give her that.
Elle y pense,	She thinks of it.

2.

Two pronouns before the verbs :

me le, or *la les ;* it, him, her, them ; to me.
te le, or *la, les ;* it, him, her, them ; to thee.
se le, or *la, les ;* it, him, her, them ; to himself, herself, themselves
nous le, or *la, les ;* it, him, her, them ; to us.
vous le, or *la, les ;* it, him, her, them ; to you.

le lui, or *leur ;* it, to him ; to her, to them.
les lui, or *leur ;* them ; to him, to her, to them.
la lui, or *leur ;* it; to him, to her to them.

Il me le prête,	He lends it to me.
Vous le lui avez envoyé,	You have sent it to her.

3.

m'en ; some to me.	*nous en ;* some to us.
t'en ; some to thee.	*vous en ;* some to you.
s'en ; some to himself, oneself, herself, themselves.	*lui en ;* some to him, to her.
	leur en ; some to them.

Il t'en envoie,	He sends some to thee.
Il nous en donne,	He gives some to us.
Nous lui en donnons,	We give some to him.
Il leur en donne.	He gives some to them.

The above personal pronouns, whether they follow or precede verbs, suffer no change, except :

me le, la, les	which	*le, la, les; moi,* it, him, her, them ;	to me
te le, la, les,	change	*le, la, les ; toi,* "	to thee.
nous le, la, les	into :	*le, la, les ; nous,* "	to us.
vous le, la, les		*le, la, les ; vous,* "	to you.

when they accompany verbs in the imperative affirmative, as :

Donnez-moi,	Give me.
Donnez-le moi,	Give it to me.
Vous me donnez,	You give me.
Vous me le donnez,	You give it to me.

(See Personal Pronouns, Part II.)

EXERCISE.

N. B.— Do not forget that personal pronouns should, as a general rule, always precede the verbs by which they are governed.

I will ask you (*for*) some *m.* paper and (some) *pl.* pens.— Give me some (of) good *m.* sugar.—Have you bought (some)

(of) large *m. pl.* knives, and (some) (of) small *m. pl.* pen-knives? Your brother has few (of) books and still less (of) paper.—(The) good *pl.* children love (the) good *pl.* masters.—How many (of) houses have you?—I have six (of them).—Do you rise early (*in*) the *m.* morning?—We generally rise at six o'clock (hours.)—If you have lost your *pl.* books, look *for* them.—This *m.* ink-stand belongs to Joseph, give it to him back.—I have lent to her some (of) good *f. pl.* pens.—Where has she put *f. pl.* them? I think that we have forbidden to him to (of) do it, but he is very inattentive, he has not heard you.—Every time that I have promised something, I have always given it.—If you look (*for*) him, you will find him (in my house.)

TRENTE-SIXIÈME LEÇON.—THIRTY-SIXTH LESSON.

PRONOMS PERSONNELS EMPLOYÉS AVEC DES PRÉPOSITIONS, OU EN RÉPONSE AUX QUESTIONS, OU JOINTS PAR DES CONJONCTIONS.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS USED WITH PREPOSITIONS, OR IN ANSWER TO QUESTIONS, OR CONNECTED WITH CONJUNCTIONS.

	Nom. Acc.		Nom.	Acc.
moi,	I or me.	*nous,*	we,	us.
toi,	thou, thee.	*vous,*	you,	you.
lui,	he, him.	*eux,* m.	they,	them.
elle,	she, her.	*elles,* f.	they,	them.

Je me promène avec lui, avec eux et avec elle.
I walk, with him, them, her.

Toi, lui, elle et moi, nous irons à la campagne.
Thou, he, she and I will go to the country.

avec,	with.	*sur,*	upon.	*derrière,*	behind.
contre,	against	*sous,*	under.	*devant,*	before, (in front of.)
pour,	for.	*dans,*	in.	*avant,*	before, time, place.
sans	without.	*après,*	after.	*fâché contre,*	angry with.

Venez avec elle,	Come with her,
Sortez sans lui,	Go out without him.
Entrez derrière nous,	Come in behind us.
Marchez devant eux,	Walk before them.
Allez à elles,	Go to them.

écrit, m.	written.	*lu,* m.	read.	*ingrat,* m.	ungrateful.
écrite, f.	written.	*lue,* f.	read.	*ingrate,* f.	ungrateful.

(See Prepositions, Part II.)

EXERCISE.

Mind personal pronouns before the verbs, except in the imperative affirmative.

Your brother *has* (is) arrived before me.—Go with them.—You do not like your sister; you (are always speaking) against her.—Is this letter for you or for me?—*It* (she) is for you.—Why has he spoken against them?—Is she angry *with* (against) them?—This *f.* letter has been written *f.* by him for her.—Your niece has been (at our house) to day.—This child is ungrateful to (towards) his master.—To whom did you give your money?—If you walk behind me, I will be very angry with (against) you.—They have (are) gone *pl.* towards the *f.* town.—(Go out) without her.—Who is before you?—He.—He or she.—I.—Come after him (to my house.)—I will be glad (*to*) (*de*) see you and your brother also.

TRENTE-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.—THIRTY-SEVENTH LESSON.

VERBES RÉFLÉCHIS ET UNIPERSONNELS.		REFLECTIVE AND UNIPERSONAL VERBS.	
se lever,	to rise, to get up.	*se réjouir* (*de*)	to rejoice (at.)
se laver,	to wash oneself.	*s'habiller,*	to dress oneself.
se promener,	to take a walk.	*se coucher,*	to go to bed, to lie [down.
se hâter,	to hasten, to hurry.	*s'asseoir,*	to sit.
se tromper,	to be mistaken.	*se dépêcher,*	to make haste.
se reposer,	to rest oneself.	*s'affliger* (*de*)	to grieve (at.)
se porter,	to be, to do, to carry oneself.	*s'amuser,*	to amuse, enjoy oneself.
se déshabiller,	to undress oneself.		

(For Reflective verbs, see Part II.)

il pleut,	it rains or is raining.	*il tonne,*	it thunders.
il gèle,	it freezes.	*il dégèle,*	it thaws.
il neige,	it snows.	*il grêle,*	it hails.
il arrive,	it happens.	*il tombe,*	there falls.
il faut,	it is requisite, necessary.		

Il fait chaud,	It is warm.
Il fait humide,	It is damp.
Il fait froid,	It is cold.
Il fait sec,	It is dry.
Il fait beau temps,	It is fine weather.
Il fait mauvais temps,	It is bad weather.
Il fait de la pluie,	It rains.
Il fait du soleil,	It is sunny.
Il fait des éclairs,	It lightens.
Il fait bon marcher,	It is good walking.
Il fait mauvais marcher,	It is bad walking.

In speaking of the changes of the weather, the French invariably use the verb *faire* in the 3rd singular.

tôt,	soon.	*le lever du soleil,*	sun rise.
tard,	late.	*le coucher du soleil,*	sun set.
le clair de lune,	moon light.	*au clair de la lune,*	by moon light.
à la clarté de la chandelle,	by candle light.		

EXERCISE.

Good *morning* (day) Sir, how do you do ?—Very well I thank you.—How have you slept (the) last *f.* night.—Were you dressed when I (*came* in) (am come in).—I was dressing myself, for (*car*) I knew you were waiting (*for*) me.—Will you take a walk with me ?—With pleasure.—Where will you go ?—Let us go to (the) church.—Does this road take to (the) church ?—No, it takes to the *m.* castle.—When the boys are diligent *pl.* do they (take a walk) with their *pl.* teachers ?—Yes, the good *pl.* and diligent *pl.* boys are always glad *pl* to (of) take a walk with their *pl.* teachers.—Make haste and we will amuse ourselves in the garden with our cousin, who (is) arrived from (*his*) journey.—He will relate (to us) a great many (of) stories.—We will listen attentively.—Have the servants yet washed the linen which *acc.* I had put in the *m.* basket ?—Yes, they have washed it.—Why do you grieve (so much) ?—You go to bed too late and you get up also too late; if you continue so, you will never be well.—You (are mistaken); we always go to bed at nine o'clock (hours) and we rise at the *m.* rising of the *m.* sun.

TRENTE-HUITIÈME LEÇON.—THIRTY-EIGHTH LESSON.

gronder,	to scold.	*le matelas,* m.	the mattress.
conseiller,	to advise.	*les oreillers,* m.	the pillows.
apporter	to bring	*le traversin,* m.	the bolster.
porter,	to carry.	*les draps,* m.	the sheets.

souhaiter, to wish for, or to *les serviettes*, f. the towels.
désirer, to desire. *le bois-de-lit*, m. the bedstead.
le savon, m. the soap. *les essuie-mains*, *m.* the towels.
le lit, m. the bed. *le feu*, the fire.
un incendie, m. a fire, conflagration.
promis, promised. *emprunté*, borrowed.
défendu, forbidden. *voulu*, wished for.
chaque fois, every time. *quelquefois*, sometimes.
bien des fois, many times. *une fois*, once.
Tout ce qui est, nom. All that *which* is.
Tout ce que j'ai, acc. All that *which* I have.
Faire, to do, make, perform. *Faites du feu*, Make *a* fire.
Faites, do, act, make, perform. *Faites un bon feu*, Make a good fire.
Le dessein, the design, intention.

J'ai dessein de sortir.
My intention is to go out.
Lit.—I have (the) intention to go out.

EXERCISE.

REMARK.—Mind the place of Pronouns.

You (are) always (scolding) your *pl.* servants.—He brings me all *m. s.* (that which) *acc.* I want.—Do you wish me a (the) good *m.* morning (day) or a *f.* good *f.* health.—The soaps that we have bought *pl.* are very good *m. pl.*—All that which you do, you do it well.—Do you intend to (of) carry the towels into my *f.* room. The *f.* servant *f.* has forgotten (*to*) (*de*) give me (some) *pl.* napkins and (some) *m.* soap.—She forgets many times.—What would you advise (to him) *to* (*de*) do?—I would not advise (to) him any thing.—The *m.* bedstead is new *m.*, but the mattresses *m.* are not new *pl.*—Tell (to the man) to (*de*) make a *m.* good *m.* fire, for (*car*) (I am cold.)—Every time (that) he comes into my *f.* room, he always forgets to (*de*) bring me all that which I want. —There was a great fire (not *feu*) yesterday; did you see it?—No, I was in (to the) *m.* bed.

SUR QUELQUES IDIOMES FRANÇAIS QUI PRÉSENTENT D'ASSEZ GRANDES DIFFICULTÉS

THE DIFFERENT MEANINGS OF TO *Take* :

1. Will you *take* me to the play, I don't know the way.	*Voulez-vous me conduire au théâtre, je n'en connais pas le chemin.*
2. Next time you come, bring your sister.	*La prochaine fois que vous viendrez (amenez) votre sœur.*
3. Take him by the arm.	*Prenez-le par le bras.*
4. Take those books to him, he wants them.	*Portez-lui ces livres ; il en a besoin.*
5. Take that away.	*Emportez cela.*
6. Take the horses away.	*Emmenez les chevaux.*
7. Bring this to me.	*Apportez-moi ceci.*

OF OUGHT, SHOULD, ETC.

1. He ought to have been punished.	*Il aurait dû être puni.*
2. We might have done that.	*Nous aurions pu le faire.*
3. I shall have to tell him of it.	*Il faudra que je le lui dise.*
4. You should speak otherwise.	*Vous devriez parler autrement.*

OF TO MARRY :

1. They say she will never marry.	*On dit qu'elle ne se mariera jamais.*
2. It was our Bishop who married them.	*C'est notre évêque qui les a mariés.*
3. He married a very pretty young lady.	*Il a épousé une très-jolie demoiselle.*

OF TO KNOW, TO HAVE JUST, TO BE ABLE, TO ENABLE :

1. Do you know he has arrived ?	*Savez vous qu'il est arrivé ?*
2. I know the city of Toronto ; it is well laid out.	*Je connais la ville de Toronto ; elle est bien alignée.*

3. He has just done it.	*Il vient de le faire.*
4. He had just risen, when I came.	*Il venait de se lever, quand j'entrai.*
5. Where did you leave off?	*Où en êtes vous resté?*
5. I can do it.	*Je puis le faire.*
7. I am able to do it.	*Je suis à même de le faire.*
8. I will enable you to do it.	*Je vous mettrai à même de le faire*
9. We will accomplish it.	*Nous en viendrons à bout.*

OF TO FIT, TO MEAN, TO SET, TO LONG:

1. That fits you.	*Cela vous va.*
2. I mean that you are wrong.	*Je veux dire que vous avez raison.*
3. It is raining.	*Il pleut* or *il fait de la pluie.*
4. That man has set this house on fire.	*Cet homme a mis le feu à cette maison.*
5. I long to see you again.	*Il me tarde de vous revoir.*

OF TO BEAR A GRUDGE, TO LOOK:

1. If you bear Dr. Sangrado a grudge, write against him.	*Si vous en voulez au Docteur Sangrado, écrivez contre lui.*
2. Don't trouble yourself.	*Ne vous donnez pas la peine.*
3. That boy always disturbs the class.	*Ce garçon dérange toujours la classe.*
4. Look at him.	*Regardez-le.*
5. Look at your watch.	*Regardez à votre montre.*

OTHER IDIOMS:

1. I have cut my hand.	*Je me suis coupé la main.*
2. You turn your back to him; how rude!	*Vous lui tournez le dos; que c'est rude!*
3. She has sore eyes.	*Elle a mal aux yeux.*
4. He has a sore foot.	*Il a mal au pied.*
5. I have a headache.	*J'ai mal à la tête* or *j'ai un mal de tête.*

THE FOLLOWING SUBSTANTIVES HAVE ONE SIGNIFICATION IN ONE GENDER AND ANOTHER IN THE OTHER GENDER.

MASCULINE.		FEMININE.	
aide,	assistant.	*aide,*	assistance.
coche,	coach.	*coche,*	sow.
enseigne,	midshipman.	*enseigne,*	sign, sign board.
foret,	gimlet.	*forêt,*	forest.
garde,	guard, keeper.	*garde,*	guard, keeping.
guide,	guide.	*guide,*	rein.
hymne,	poem.	*hymne,*	hymn, (at church.)
livre,	book.	*livre,*	pound.
manche,	handle.	*manche,*	sleeve.
manœuvre,	labourer.	*manœuvre,*	manœuvre.
mémoire,	bill.	*mémoire,*	memory.
mode,	mood.	*mode,*	mode, fashion.
moule,	mould.	*moule,*	mussel.
mousse,	ship boy.	*mousse,*	moss.
œuvre,	performance.	*œuvre,*	work, deed of charity.
office,	duty, service.	*office,*	pantry.
page,	page, attendant.	*page,*	page (of a book)
parallèle,	comparison.	*parallèle,*	parallel (line.)
pendule,	pendulum.	*pendule,*	clock.
période,	period, highest point.	*période,*	period, (sentence.)
poste,	post, situation.	*poste,*	post-office.
pourpre,	purple, (color.)	*pourpre,*	purple, (dignity.)
sentinelle.	sentinel, (name.)	*sentinelle,*	sentry, (a soldier.)
somme,	nap.	*somme,*	sum, burden.
souris,	smile.	*souris,*	mouse.
tour,	turn, trick.	*tour.*	tower.
trompette,	trumpeter.	*trompette,*	trumpet.
vague,	vagueness, vacuum.	*vague,*	wave.
vase,	vessel, vase.	*vase,*	slime, mud.
voile,	veil.	*voile,*	sail, canvas.

NOUNS BEGINNING WITH AN *h* ASPIRATE, THAT IS TO SAY, BEFORE WHICH NO ELISION NOR APOSTROPHE CAN TAKE PLACE:

hableur,	bragger.	*haut-bois*, m.	hautboy.
hache, f.	ax.	*hennir*,	to neigh.
hagard,	haggard.	*havre-sac*, m.	knapsack.
haie, f.	hedge.	*héraut*, m.	herald.
haillons, m.	rags.	**héros*, m.	hero.
haine, f.	hatred.	*hérisser*,	to bristle.
haïr,	to hate.	*hêtre*, m.	beech.
haire, f.	hair-shirt.	*heurter*,	to rap to knock.
hâler,	to be sun burnt.	*hibou*, m.	owl.
halle, f.	market place.	*hideux*,	hideous.
hallebarde, f.	halberd.	*hiérarchie*, f.	hierarchy.
halte, f.	halt.	*hisser*,	to hoist.
hamac, m.	hammock.	*homard*, m.	lobster.
hanche, f.	hip.	*honte*, f.	shame.
hanneton, m.	tree beetle.	*horde*, f.	horde.
hanter,	to frequent.	*hotte*, f.	basket.
harangue, f.	oration.	*houblon*, m.	hops.
harrasser,	to harass.	*houille*, f.	pit-coal.
harceler,	to harass.	*houlette*, f.	sheep-hook.
hardes, f.	clothes.	*houppe*, f.	tuft.
hardi,	bold.	*houppelande*, f.	great coat.
hareng, m.	herring.	*houspiller*,	to worry.
hargneux,	surley.	*housse*, f.	horse-cloth.
haricots, m.	kidney-bean.	*huche*, f.	trough.
harnais, m.	harness.	*huée*, f.	hooting.
harpe, f.	harp.	*huguenot*, m.	huguenot.
harpon, m.	harpoon.	*humer*,	whale, swallow up.
hasard, m.	chance.	*huppe*, f.	hoopoo.
hâter,	to hasten.	*hure*, f	head, head of hair.
hausser,	to rise.	*hurler*,	houl.
haut,	haut.	*hussard*, m.	hussar.

REMARKS.—* *Héroïne, héroïsme, héroïque;* the *h* of which is not aspirate, although it is in *héros*.

ABBREVIATIONS

OCCURRING IN THE DICTIONARY OF THE FIRST PART

abs.....	*means*	absolute.
acc.....	do	accusative.
adj.....	do	adjective.
adv.....	do	adverb.
art.....	do	article.
conj.....	do	conjunction.
dem. or d. adj...	do	demonstrative adjective.
d. pro.....	do	demonstrative pronoun.
f.....	do	feminine.
m.....	do	masculine.
m. or f.....	do	masculine or feminine.
m. or f. pl.....	do	masculine or feminine plural.
m. s.	do	masculine singular.
n.....	do	noun.
nom.	do	nominative.
p. adj.....	do	possessive adjective.
p. part.	do	past participle.
prep.....	do	preposition.
pro.....	do	pronoun.
p. pro.....	do	possessive pronoun.
s.....	do	singular.
v.	do	verb.
v. irr.....	do	verb irregular.
v. refl.....	do	verb reflective.
1st. c.....	do	first conjugation.
2nd c.....	do	second conjugation.
3rd c.....	do	third conjugation.
4th c.....	do	fourth conjugation.

DICTIONARY.

A.

A or an *adj.*	un, *m.* une, *f.*
Act, (to), *v.*	agir.
Active, *adj.*	actif, *m.* active, *f.*
Advance (to), *v.*	avancer, 1*st. c.*
Advise (to), *v.*	conseiller, 1*st. c.*
Æmilius, *n.*	Emile, *m.*
Affair, *n.*	affaire, *f.*
Africa, *n.*	Afrique, *f.*
After, *prep.*	après.
Against, *prep.*	contre.
Age, *n.*	âge, *m.* siècle, *m.*
Aged, *adj.*	âgé, *m.* âgée, *f.*
Ago.	il y a.
Agreeable, *adj.*	agréable, *m.* or *f.*
Aim, *n.*	but, *m.*
All, *adj*, *pro.*	tout, *m.* e. *f.* tous *m.*
All men.	tous les hommes. [*pl.*
Alone, *adj.*	seul, *m.* e, *f.*
A longtime, *adv.*	longtemps.
Alphonso, *n.*	Alphonse, *m.*
Also, *adv.*	aussi.
Always, *adv.*	toujours.
America, *n.*	Amérique, *f.*
Amiable, *adj.*	aimable, *m.* or *f.*
Amuse, (to) *v.*	amuser. 1*st c.* / s'amuser, *v. refl.*
Amongst, *prep.*	parmi.
Amusing, *adj.*	amusant, *m.*
Amuse oneself (to) *v.*	s'amuser, *v. refl.*
An, *adj.*	un, *m.* une, *f.*
And, *con.*	et.
Anger, *n.*	colère, *f.*
Angry with, *adj.*	fâché contre, *m*
Animal, *n.*	animal *m.*
Answer, *n.*	réponse, *f.*
Answer (to), *v.*	répondre, 4*th. c. reg.*
Answered, *p. part.*	répondu.
Any, *art.*, *pro.*	du, de la, de l', des *art.*, en. *pro.*
Any body,	quelqu'un. *on with v.*
Appear, *v.*	paraître, 4*th c.*, *irr*
Apple, *n.*	pomme, *f.*
Are, *v.*	sont.
Are called.	s'appellent, 3*d pl.*
Arrive, (to) *v.*	arriver, 1*st c.*
Arrived, *p. part.*	arrivé, m. ée. *f.*
As, *conj.*	comme, *conj.*, que, *c.*
As, as, *adv.*, *conj.*	aussi, *adv.* que, *con.*
Asia.	Asie.
Ask, (to) for, *v.*	demander, 1*st c.*
As much, *adv.* / As many, *adv.*	autant.
As, *in comp.*	que.
A short time, *adv.*	peu de temps.
Attentively, *adv.*	attentivement.
At, *prep.*	à, chez.
At fault, *adv.*	en défaut.
At my house.	chez moi.
At that man's.	chez cet homme.
At whose house.	chez qui.
At the time, when, *adv*	lorsque.
At that time, *adv.*	alors.
At present, *adv.*	à présent, maintenant
Aunt, *n.*	tante, *f.*
Authority, *n.*	autorité. *f.*
Autumn, *n.*	automne, *m.*
Average, *n.*	moyenne, *f.*
Away, *adj.*	parti, *m.* le, *f.* / absent, *m.*

B.

Bad, *adj.*	mauvais, *m.* e, *f.*
Badly, *adv.*	mal.
Ball, *n.*	bal, *m.*
Bank, *n.*	banque, *f.*
Banker, *n.*	banquier, *m.*
Bark, (to) *v.*	aboyer, 1*st c.*
Basket, *n.*	panier, *m.* corbeille, *f.*
Be fond of (to), *v.*	Aimer, 1*st c.*
Be slow, (to) *v.*	retarder, 1*st c.*
Be away, (to), *v.*	être absent. être parti.
Be well (to), *v.*	se porter bien, 1*st c.*
Be mistaken (to), *v.*	se tromper.
Be able (to), *v.*	pouvoir, 3*d c. irr.*
Be to (to), *v.*	devoir, 3*d c. irr.*
Be, (to) *v.*	être, 4*th c.*, se porter,
Beard, *n.*	barbe, *f.* [*refl.*
Beautiful, *adj.*	beau, *m* bel, *m.* belle, *f.* joli, *m.* e, *f.*
Because, *conj.*	parce que.
Become, (to) *v.*	devenir, 2*d c. irr.*
Bed, *n.*	lit, *m.*
Bedstead, *n.*	bois-de-lit, *m.*
Beef, *n.*	bœuf, *m.*
Been, *p. part.*	été, *never changes.*
Beer, *n.*	bière, *f.*
Before, *prep.*	avant. devant.
Begin. (to) *v.*	commencer, 1*st c.*
Beginning, *v.*	commencement, *m.*
Begun, *p. part.*	commencé, *m.*
Behind, *prep.*	derrière.
Behave, (to) *v.*	se conduire, 4*th c. irr* / se comporter, 1*st c.*
Believe, (to) *v.*	croire, 4*th c. irr.*
Belong, (to) *v*	être, 4*th c.*, appartenir, 2*d c.. irr.*
Belongs, *v.* 3*d. s.*	est, appartient.

Belong, *v.* 3*d pl.*	sont, appartiennent.
Bend, (to) *v.*	ployer, 1*st c.*
Berlin, *n.*	Berlin.
Best (the), *adj., adv.*	le meilleur, le mieux.
Best, *adj.*	le meilleur, *m.*
Better, *adj.*	meilleur, *m.*
Better, *adv.*	mieux.
Between, *prep.*	entre.
Big, *adj.*	grand, *m.* gros, *m.*
Black, *adj.*	noir, *m.* e, *f.*
Blame, (to) *v.*	blâmer, 1*st c.*
Blind, *adj.*	aveugle, *m.* or *f.*
Boat. *n.*	bateau, *m.*
Boarding, *n.*	pension, *f.*
Body,	corps, *m.*
Bolster, *n.*	traversin, *m.*
Book. *n.*	livre, *m.*
Bookseller, *n.*	libraire, *m.*
Boot, *n.*	botte, *f.*
Borrow, (to) *v.*	emprunter, 1*st c.*
Both, *pro.*	l'un et l'autre, tous les deux.
Bottle, *n.*	bouteille, *f.*
Bought, *p. part.*	acheté, *m.*
Boy, *n.*	garçon, *m.*
Brandy, *n.*	eau-de-vie, *f.*
Brave, *adj.*	Brave, *m.* or *f.*
Breakfast, *n.*	déjeuner, *m.*
Breakfast, (to), *v.*	déjeuner, 1*st c.*
Bread, *n.*	pain, *m.*
Bring, (to) *v.*	apporter, 1*st c.* / amener, 1*st. c.*
Bring me.	apportez-moi.
Broad, *adj.*	large, *m.* or *f.*
Brought, *p. part.*	apporté, *m.* amené.
Broken, *p. part.*	cassé, *m.*
Brother, *n.*	frère, *m.*
Brussels, *n.*	Bruxelles.
Build (to), *v.*	bâtir, 2*d c. reg.*
Built, *p. part.*	bâti, *m.*
Bull, *n.*	taureau, *m.*
Business, *n.*	affaires, *f. pl.*
Butter, *n.*	beurre, *m.*
But, *conj.*	mais.
But little.	ne guère.
Buy, (to), *v.*	acheter, 1*st c.*
By, *prep.*	par.
By moon light.	au clair de la lune.
By candle light.	à la chandelle.

C.

CALAIS, *n.*	Calais.
Call, (to) *v.*	appeler, 1*st c.*
Called, (is).	s'appelle, 3*d s.*
Called, (are).	s'appellent, 3*d pl.*
Called (to be), *v.*	s'appeler, 1*st c.*
Came (I).	je venais, vins.
Came back, (I).	je revenais, revins.
CAN, (I).	je puis, peux.
Canada, *n,*	Canada, *m.*
Candle light (by), *v.*	à la chandelle.
Candle, *n.*	chandelle, *f.*
Care, *n.*	soin, *m.*
Carpenter, *n.*	charpentier, *m.*
Carriage, *n.*	voiture. *f.*
Carry, (to) *v.*	porter, 1*st c.*
Castle, *n.*	château, *m.*
Cat, *n.*	chat, *m.*
Cease, (to) *v,*	cesser, 1*st c.*
Ceiling. *n.*	plafond.
Century, *n.*	siècle, *m.*
Chair, *n.*	chaise, *f.*
Change, *n,*	changement, *m.*
Change, (to) *v.*	changer, 1*st c.*
Charity, *n.*	charité, *f.*
Charles, *n.*	Charles, *m.*
China, *n.*	Chine, *f.*
Check, *n.*	frein, *m.*
Cheese, *n.*	fromage, *m.*
Cherry, *n.*	cerise, *f.*
Chest, *n.*	coffre, *m.*
Child, *n.*	enfant, *m.*
Chocolate, *n.*	chocolat, *m.*
Choose (to), *v.*	choisir, 2*d c. reg.*
Chosen, *p. part.*	choisi, *m.*
Church, *n.*	église, *f.*
Civility, *n.*	civilité, *f.*
City, *n.*	ville, *f.*
Class-room *n.*	classe, *f.*
Clever, *adj.*	habile, *m.* or *f.*
Clock, *n.*	pendule, *f.* horloge, *f.*
Cloth, *n.*	drap, *m.*
Coat, *n.*	habit, *m.*
Coffee, *n.*	café, *m.*
Cold, *n.*	froid, *m.*
Cold, *adj.*	froid, *m.*
Cold (to be).	avoir froid.
Collect, (to) *v.*	percevoir, 3*d c. reg.*
Come, (to) *v.*	venir, 2*d c. irr.*
Come back (to). *v.*	revenir, 2*d c. irr.*
Come down (to), *v.*	descendre, 4*th c. reg.*
Come in (to), *v.*	entrer, 1*st c.*
Comes, *v.* 3*d s.*	vient.
Conceive (to), *v.*	concevoir, 3*d c. reg.*
Concert, *n.*	concert, *m.*
Conflagration, *n.*	incendie, *f.*
Continue (to), *v.*	continuer, 1*st c.*
Copied, *p. part.*	copié, *m.*
Copy. *d.*	copie, *f.*
Copy, (to), *v.*	copier, 1*st c.*
Copy-book, *n.*	cahier, *m.*
Corner, *n.*	coin, *m.*
Correct, (to) *v.*	corriger, 1*st c.*
Correct, *adj.*	correct, *m.*
Cost, *p. part.*	coûté, *m.*
Cost, (to) *v.*	coûter, 1*st c.*
Country, *n.*	pays, *m.*
Courage, *n.*	courage, *m.*
Cousin, *n.*	cousin, *m.* e, *f.*
Cravat, *n.*	cravate, *f.*
Create (to), *v.*	créer, 1*st c.*
Cried. *p. part.*	pleuré, crié, *m.*
Created, *p. part.*	créé, *m.* e, *f.*
Cruel, *adj.*	cruel, *m.* le, *f.*
Cry (to), *v.*	pleurer, 1*st c.*
Cup, *n.*	tasse, *f.*

D.

DAMP, *adj.*	humide, *m.* or *f.*
Dance, *n.*	danse, *f.*
Dance, (to) *v.*	danser, 1*st c.*

Daughter, *n.*	fille, *f.*
Day, *n.*	jour, *m.*
Dead, *adj.*	mort, *m.*
Dear, *adj.*	cher, *m.* ère, *f.*
Dearly, *adv.*	chèrement.
Dearer, *adj.*	plus cher, *m.*
Dearest, *adj.*	le plus cher, *m.*
Deceive, (to) *v.*	tromper, 1*st c.*
Deceitful, *adj.*	trompeur, *m.* se, *f.*
Delightful, *adj.*	charmant, délicieux.
Defect, *n.*	défaut, *m.*
Design, *n.*	dessein, *m.*
Desire, *n.*	désir, *m.*
Desire, (to) *v.*	désirer, 1*st c.*
Dey, *n.*	dey, *m.*
Difficult, *adj.*	difficile, *m.* or *f.*
Diligent, *adj.*	appliqué, *m.*
Dine, (to), *v.*	dîner, 1*st c.*
Dinner, *n.*	dîner, *m.*
Dirty, *adj.*	sale, *m.* or *f.*
Dish, *n.*	plat, *m.*
divide (to), *v.*	diviser, partager, 1*st c.*
Do, (to), *v.*	faire, 4*th c. irr.*
Dog, *n.*	chien, *m.*
Done, *p. part.*	fait, *m.* fini, *m.*
Door, *n.*	porte, *f.*
Dover, *n.*	Douvres.
Dozen, *n.*	douzaine, *f.*
Drawing, *n.*	dessin, *m.*
dress oneself (to), *v.*	s'habiller, se vêtir.
Dressed, *p. part.*	habillé, vêtu.
Dress (to), *v.*	habiller, vêtir.
Dress, *n.*	robe, *f.*
Drunk, *p. part.*	bu, *m.*
Drink (to), *v.*	boire, 4*th c irr.*
Dry, *adj.*	sec, *m.* sèche, *f.*
Dumb, *adj.*	muet, *m.* muette, *f.*
Duty, *n.*	devoir, *m.*
Dwell (to), *v.*	demeurer, 1*st c.*

E.

EACH, *adj.*	chaque, *m.* or *f.* tout
Each, *pro.*	chacun, *m.* e, *f.* [*m.*
Each other, *pro.*	l'un l'autre, *m.*
Earth, *n.*	terre, *f.*
Early, *adv.*	de bonne heure.
Easy, *adj.*	facile, *m.* or *f.*
Easily, *adv.*	facilement.
Eat (to), *v.*	manger, 1*st c.*
Eaten, *p. part.*	mangé, *m.*
Edward, *n.*	Edouard, *m.*
Eight, *adj.*	huit.
Eleven, *adj.*	onze.
Employ, (to) *v.*	employer, 1*st c.*
End (to), *v.*	terminer, 1*st c.* finir,
End, *n.*	fin, *f.* [2*d c. reg.*
England, *n.*	Angleterre, *f.*
English, *n.* or *adj.*	Anglais, *m.* e, *f.*
Enough, *adv.*	assez.
Erase (to), *v.*	effacer, 1*st c.*
Europe, *n.*	Europe, *f.*
Evening, *n.*	soir, *m.* soirée, *f.*
Every, *adj.*	chaque, *m.* or *f.* tout, *m.*
Every body, *n.*	tout le monde, *m. s.*
Every day, *n.*	tous les jours, *m. pl.*
Every time, *n.*	toutes les fois, *f. pl.*
Every thing, *pro.*	tout, *m. s.*
Evil, *n.*	mal, *m.*
Exagerate, (to) *v.*	exagérer, 1*st c.*
Exercise, *n.*	thème, *m.* exercice, *m.*
Exercise (co) *v.*	exercer, 1*st c.*

F.

FABLE, *n.*	fable, *f.*
Faithful, *adj.*	fidèle, *m.* or *f.*
Fall, (to) *v.*	tomber, 1*st c.*
False, *adj.*	faux, *m.* fausse, *f.*
Family, *n.*	famille, *f.*
Far, *adv.*	loin.
Far, *adj.*	éloigné, *m.*
Fashionable, *adj.* / Fashionable, *adv.*	à la mode.
Father, *n.*	père, *m.*
Fault, *n.*	faute, *f.* défaut, *m.*
Fault, (at) *adv.*	en défaut.
Fear, *n.*	peur. *f.*
Fear, *n.*	crainte, *f.*
Few, *adj.*	quelques, *m.* or *f. pl.*
Few, *adv.*	peu (de).
Fewer, *adv.*	moins.
Fifteen, *adj.*	quinze.
Fill, (to) *v.*	remplir, 2*d c. reg.*
Find, (to) *v.*	trouver, 1*st c.*
Fine, *adj.*	beau, *m.* belle, *f.*
Fine, (texture), *adj.*	fin, *m.* fine, *f.*
Finish, (to) *v.*	finir, 2*d.* c. *reg.*
Finished, *p. pvrt.*	fini, fait, *m.*
Fire, *n.*	feu, *m.* incendie, *m.*
First, *adj.*	premier, *m.*
Firstly, *adv.*	d'abord, premièrement.
Fish, *n.*	poisson, *m.*
Fist, *n.*	poing, *m.*
Five, *adj.*	cinq.
Flock, *n.*	troupeau, *m.*
Flour, *n.*	farine, *f.*
Flower, *n.*	fleur, *f.*
Flute, *n.*	flûte, *f.*
Fly, (to) *v.*	voler, 1*st c.*
Fly, *n.*	mouche, *f.*
Fond of, (to be), *v.*	aimer, 1*st c.*
For, *con.*	car.
For, *prep.*	pour.
Forbid, (to) *v.*	défendre, 4*th c. reg.*
Forget, (to) *v.*	oublier, 1*st c.*
Forgotten, *p. part.*	oublié.
Forty-five, *adj.*	quarante-cinq.
Fork, *n.*	fourchette, *f.*
Formerly, *adv.*	autrefois.
Fortnight, *n.*	quinze jours, *m. pl.*
Fortune, *n.*	fortune, *f.*
Found, *p. part.*	trouvé, *m.*
France, *n.*	France, *f.*
Francis, *n.*	François, *m.*
Frederick, *n.*	Frédéric, *m.*
Free, *adj*	libre, *m.* franc, *m.*
Freeze (to), *v.*	geler, 1*st c.*
French, *n.*	Français, *m.*
French, *adj.*	français, *m.* franc, *m.*
Fresh, *adj.*	frais, *m.* fraîche, *f.*
Friend, *n.* or *adj.*	ami, *m.* amie, *f.*

Friendship, *n.*	amitié, *f.*
Frighten, (to) *v.*	effrayer, 1*st c.*, faire peur
From, *prep.*	de, dès.
From whom, *pro.*	de qui.
Fruit, *n.*	fruit, *m.*
Fulfil (to), *v.*	remplir, 2*d c. reg.*

G.

Game, *n.*	jeu, *m.*
Garden, *n.*	jardin, *m.*
Gardener, *n.*	jardinier, *m.*
Gardener's wife *n.*	jardinière, *f.*
General, *n.* or *adj.*	général, *m.*
Generally, *adv.*	généralement.
Gentleman, *n.*	monsieur, *m.*
Gentlemen, *n.*	messieurs, *pl.*
Gently, *adv.*	doucement.
Generosity, *n.*	Générosité, *f.*
Geneva, *n.*	Genève, *f.*
George, *n.*	George, *m.*
German, *n.* or *adj.*	Allemand, *m.*
Get up, (to) *v.*	se lever, 1*st c. refl.*
Gift, *n.*	don, *m.* présent, *m.*
Gilt, *adj.*	doré, *m.*
Girl, *n.*	fille, *f.*
Give, (to) *v.*	donner, 1*st c.*
Given, *p. part.*	donné, *m.*
Give me.	donnez-moi.
Glass, *n.*	verre, *m.*
Glove, *n.*	gant, *m.*
Go, (to) *v.*	aller 1*st c. irr.*
Go out. (to), *v.*	sortir, 2*d c. irr.*
Go to bed, (to) *v.*	se coucher, 1*st c. refl.*
Go fast (to), *v.*	avancer. 1*st c.*
Goat, *n.*	chèvre, *f.*
God. *n.*	Dieu, *m.*
Gold, *n.*	or, *m.*
Gone, *p. part.*	parti, *m.* allé, *m.*
Good, *adj.*	bon, *m.* bonne, *f.*
Great deal (a), *adv.*	beaucoup.
Great many (a), *adv.*	beaucoup.
Great while (a), *adv.*	longtemps.
Greek, *adj.*	grec, *m.* grecque, *f.*
Greek, *n.*	Grec, *m.* Grecque, *f.*
Green, *adj.*	vert, *m.*
Grieve, (to) *v.*	affliger, 1*st c.* / s'affliger, 1*st c. refl.*
Guitar, *n.*	guitare, *f.*
Gustavus, *n.*	Gustave, *m.*

H.

Had, *p. part.*	ou, *m.* eue, *f.*
Hail, *n.*	grêle *f.*
Hair, *n.*	cheveu, *m.*
Half, *n.*	moitié, *f.*
Half. *adj.*	demi, *m.*
Halfpenny, *n.*	sou, *m.*
Ham. *n.*	jambon, *m.*
Hamlet, *n.*	hameau, *m.*
Hand *n.*	main, *f.*
Hang from, (to) *v.*	pendre, suspendre.
Handkerchief, *n.*	mouchoir, *m.*
Happen, (to) *v.*	arriver, 1*st c.*
Happiness, *n.*	bonheur, *m.*
Happier, *adj.*	plus heureux.
Happy, *adj.*	heureux, *m.*
Hasten, (to) *v.*	se hâter, 1*st c.*
Hat, *n.*	chapeau, *m.*
Have, (to) *v.*	avoir, 3*d c. irr.*
He, *pro.*	il, lui, 3*d pers.*
He who, *pro.*	celui qui.
Head, *n.*	tête, *f.*
Health, *n.*	santé, *f.*
Heard, *p. part.*	entendu, *m.*
Hear, (to) *v.*	entendre, 4*th c. reg.*
Henry, *n.*	Henri, *m.*
Her, *p. adj.*	son, *m.* sa, *f.* ses, *pl.*
Her, *p. pro.*	elle, la, lui.
Here, *adv.*	ici.
Here is, *prep.*	voici.
Here I am,	me voici.
Herself, *pro.*	elle-même, se, soi.
Hers, *p. pro.*	le sien, *m.* etc.
High, *adj.*	haut, *m.*
Higher, *adj.*	plus haut, *n.*
Highest, *adj.*	le plus haut, *m.*
Him, *pro.*	le, lui.
Himself, *pro.*	lui-même, se, soi.
His, *p. pro.*	le sien, *m.*
His, *p. adj.*	son, *m.* sa, *f.* ses, *pl.*
Home, (at) *adv.*	à la maison.
Honest, *adj.*	honnête *m.* or *f.*
Hope, (to) *v.*	espérer, 1*st c.*
Horse, *n.*	cheval, *m.*
Hour, *n.*	heure, *f.*
House, *n.*	maison, *f.*
How, *adv.*	comment.
How long, *adv.*	depuis quand.
How much time, *adv.*	combien de temps.
How much, *adv.* / How many, *adv.*	combien (de).
How do you do.	comment vous portez-vous.
How old.	quel âge.
How do you like.	comment trouvez-vous or aimez-vous.
Hundred, *adj.*	cent.
Hundredweight, *n.*	quintal, *m.*
Hunger, *n*,	faim, *f.*
Hungry, *adj.*	affamé.
Hungry, (to be), *v.*	avoir faim.

I.

I, *pro.*	je, moi, 1*st pers.*
I write, (*v*).	j'écris.
Idle, *adj.*	paresseux, *m.*
If, *conj.*	si.
If you please.	s'il vous plaît.
Ill, *adj.*	malade, *m.* or *f.*
Image. *n.*	image, *f.*
Immortal, *adj.*	immortel, *m.* le, *f.*
In, *prep.*	dans, en, à.
In it.	y *before the verb.*
In a passion.	en colère.
In a friendly way.	par amitié.
Inattentive, *adj.*	inappliqué. *m.*
Intend, (to) *v.*	avoir dessein de, or l'intention de.
Intellect, *n.*	intelligence, *f.*
Ink, *n.*	encre, *f.*
Inkstand, *n.*	encrier, *m.*

Innocence, *n.*	innocence, *f.*
Inquisitive, *adj.*	curieux, *m.*
Iron, *n.*	fer, *m.*
Is, *v.*	est, *3d pers.*
It called, *v.*	s'appelle, *3d pers.*
It, *pro.*	il, le, la, lui.
It, *pro.*	il, elle, ce, cela.
It is they.	ce sont eux.
It is.	il est, c'est, il fait.
Italy, *n.*	Italie, *f.*
Its, *p. pro.*	son, sa, ses.
Itself, *pro.*	lui-même, elle-même, se, soi.

J.

JAMES, *n.*	Jacques.
Jealous, *adv.*	jaloux, *m.* se, *f.*
John, *n.*	Jean.
Joiner, *n.*	menuisier, *m.*
Journey, *n.*	voyage, *m.*
Journey (to) *v.*	voyager, 1*st c.*

K.

KINDNESS, *n.*	bonté, *f.*
King, *n.*	roi.*m.*
Kingdom, *n.*	royaume, *m.*
Knife, *n.*	couteau, *m.*
Knew. (I).	je connaissais, savais.
Know, (to) *v.*	savoir, 3*d c. irr.* connaître, *4th c. irr.*
Known, *p. part.*	su, connu, *m*

L.

LADY, *n.*	dame, *f.*
Ladies, *n.*	dames, *f. pl.*
Laid, *p. part.*	mis, *m.* mise, *f.*
Lake *n.*	lac, *m.*
Large, *adj.*	grand, *m.*
Larger, *adj.*	plus grand.
Last, *adj.*	dernier, *m.*
Late, (to be), *v.*	être en retard.
Late, *adv.*	tard.
Latin, *n.*	latin, *m.*
Lazy, *adj.*	paresseux, *m.* se, *f.*
Lead (to) *v.*	mener, 1*st c.*
Leaf, *n.*	feuille, *f.*
Learned, *adj.*	savant, *m.* instruit, *m*
Learned, *p. part.*	appris, *m.* instruit, *m.*
Leave, (to) *v.*	laisser, 1*st c.*
Leave off, (to) *v.*	cesser, 1*st c.*
Left, *p. part.*	laissé,
Lemon, *n.*	citron *m.*
Lend, (to) *v.*	prêter, 1*st c.*
Lent, *p. part.*	prêté, *m.*
Less, *adv.*	moins.
Lesson, *n.*	leçon, *f.*
Letter, *n.*	lettre, *f.*
Lewis, *n.*	Louis, *m.*
Life, *n.*	vie *f.*
Light, *adj.*	léger, *m.* legère, *f.*
Like (to) *v.*	aimer, 1*st c.*
Like, *adj.*	pareil, *m.*
Liked, *p. part.*	aimé, *m.*
Line, *n.*	ligne, *f.*
Linen, *n.*	linge, *m*
Lion, *n.*	lion, *m.*
Listen, (to), *v.*	écouter, 1*st c.*
Little, *adj.*	petit, *m.*
Little, *adv.*	peu.
Live, (to) *v.*	demeurer, 1*st c.*
Lively, *adv.*	vif, *m.* vive, *f.*
Loaf, *n.*	pain, *m.*
London, *n.*	Londres, *m.*
Long, *adj.*	long, *m.* longue, *f.*
Long, *adv.*	longtemps.
Longest, *adj.*	le plus long, *m.*
Longer, *adj.*	plus long, *m.*
Longtime, *adv.*	longtemps.
Look for, (to) *v.*	chercher, 1*st c.*
Looked for, *p. part.*	cherché, *m.*
Lose, (to) *v.*	perdre, *4th c. reg.*
Lost, *p. part.*	perdu, *m.*
Louisa, *n.*	Louise, *f.*
Loved, *p. part.*	aimé, *m.*
Love, (to) *v.*	aimer, 1*st c.*
Low, *adj.*	bas, *m.* se, *f.*
Low, *adv.*	bas.

M.

MADAM, *n.*	madame, *f.*
Made, *p. part.*	fait, fini, *m.*
Magnificent, *adj.*	de toute beauté.
Make haste (to), *v.*	se hâter, 1*st c.*
Make, (to) *v.*	faire, *4th c. irr.*
Man, *n.*	homme, *m.*
Many, *adv.*	beaucoup.
Many, *adj.*	plusieurs, *pl.*
Map, *n.*	carte, *f.*
Maple tree, *n.*	érable, *m.*
Master. *n.*	maître, *m.*
Mattress, *n.*	matelas, *m.*
Matter, *n.*	matière, *f.* substance, *f.*
Me, *pro.*	me. moi.
Meadow, *n.*	prairie, *f.*
Meat, *n.*	viande, *f.*
Merchant, *n.*	marchand, *m.*
Metal, *n.*	métal, *m.*
Midnight.	minuit.
Mild, *adj.*	doux, *m.* douce, *f.*
Milk, *n.*	lait, *m.*
Mine, *p. pro.*	le mien, *m* etc.
Minute, *n.*	minute, *f.*
Miss, *n.*	mademoiselle *f.*
Misfortune, *n.*	malheur, *m.*
Moderate, (to), *v.*	modérer, 1*st c.*
Modest, *adj.*	modeste, *m.* or *f.*
Montreal, *n.*	Montreal, *m.*
Money, *n.*	argent, *m.* monnaie, *f.*
Month, *n.*	mois, *m.*
Moon, *n.*	lune, *f.*
Moonlight, *n.*	clair de lune.
More, *adv,*	plus.
Morning, *n.*	matin, *m.* matinée, *f.*
Morsel, *n.*	morceau, *m.*
Mortal, *adj.*	mortel, *m.*
Mother, *n.*	mère, *f.*
Mountain, *n.*	montagne, *f.*
Much, *adv.*	beaucoup, fort,
Music, *n.*	musique, *f.*

Mustard, *n.*	moutarde, *f.*
My, *p. adj.*	mon, *m.* ma, *f.* mes, *pl.*

N.

NAPKIN, *n.*	serviette, *f.*
Nation, *n.*	nation, *f.*
Naughty, *adj.*	méchaut, *m.* mauvais, *f*
NEIGHBOUR, *n.*	voisin, *m.* voisine, *f.*
Never, *adv.*	jamais.
New, *adj.*	nouveau, *m.* neuf, *m.*
New-found land, *n.*	Terre-neuve, *f.*
Niece, *n.*	nièce, *f.*
Night, *n.*	nuit, *f.*
Nine, adj.	neuf.
No one, *pro.*	pas un, personne, *m.* / aucun, *m.*
No, *adv.*	non, ne pas.
No more.	ne plus.
Nobody, *pro.*	personne *m.*
None, *pro.*, None, *adj.*,	pas un, *m.* aucun, *m.* / nul, *m.*
Noon.	midi.
Not, *adv.*	ne pas, ne point.
Not anything.	rien, *m.*
Not any body, *pro.*	personne, *m.*
Nothing, *adv.*	rien.
Now, *adv.*	maintenant; à présent
Number,	nombre, numéro, *m.*

O.

OBEY (to), *v.*	obéir, 2*d c. reg.*
O'clock, *n.*	heure, *f.*
Of, *prep.*	de.
Of the.	du, de la, de l', des.
Of it, them, him, her, *pro.*	en, *before the verb.*
Often, *adv.*	souvent.
Oil, *n.*	huile, *f.*
Old, *adj.*	vieux, *m.* vieille, *f.*
On, *prep.*	sur.
Once, *prep.*	une fois, *f.*
One, *adj.*	un, *m.* une *f.*
One, *pro.*	on.
One.	un.
One time.	une fois, *f.*
Ontario (lake).	Ontario (lac).
Or, *con.*	ou.
Orange, *n.*	orange, *f.*
Other, *adj.*	autre, *m.* or *f.*
Otherwise, *adv.*	autrement.
Our, *p. adj.*	notre, *s.* nos, *pl.*
Ours, *p. pon.*	le nôtre, *m.*, etc.
Owe, *adj. v.*	devoir, 3*d c. irr.*
Oyster, *n.*	huître, *f.*

P.

PEACH, *n.*	pêche, *f.*
Paid for, *p. part.*	payé, *m.*
Painting, *n.*	tableau, *m.*
Pair, *n.*	paire, *f.*
Paper, *n.*	papier, *m.* journal, *m.*
Parents, *n.*	parents, *m. pl.*
Parlor, *n.*	salon, *m.*
Park, *n.*	parc, *m.*
Paris, *n.*	Paris, *m.*
Part, *n.*	partie, *f.*
Pay a visit (to), *v.*	rendre une visite.
Pay for (to), *v.*	payer, 1*st c.*
Peace, *n.*	paix, *f.*
Pear, *n.*	poire, *f.*
Peel (to), *v.*	peler, 1*st c.*
Pen, *n.*	plume, *f.*
Pencil, *n.*	crayon, *m.*
Penholder, *n.*	porte plume, *m.*
Pen-knife, *n.*	canif, *m.*
People, *n.*	gens, *m. pl.* monde, *m.*
Pepper, *n.*	poivre, *m.*
Perceive (to), *v.*	apercevoir, 3*d c. reg.*
Perform, (to) *v.*	faire, 4*th c. irr.*
Perish, (to) *v.*	périr, 3*d c. reg.*
Physician, n.	médecin, *m.*
Piano, *n.*	Piano, *m.*
Picture, *n.*	tableau, *m.*
Piece, *n.*	morceau, *m.*
Pillow, *n.*	oreiller, *m.*
Place, *n.*	place, *f.*
Placed, *p. part.*	placé, mis, *m.*
Plate, *n.*	assiette, *f.*
Play, *n.*	théâtre, *m.*
Play, (to) *v.*	jouer, 1*st c.*
Please (if you), *v.*	s'il vous plaît.
Pleased with, *adj.*	content de, *m.*
Please (to), *v.*	plaire, 4*th c. irr.*
Pleasant, *adj.*	agréable, *m.* or *f.*
Pleasure, *n.*	plaisir, *m.*
Plum, *n.*	prune, *f.*
Polite, *adj.*	honnête, *m.* or *f.* / poli, *m.*
Politeness, *n.*	Politesse, *f.* amitié, *f.*
Point, *n.*	point, *m.*
Poor, *adj.*	pauvre, *m.* or *f.*
Poorest, *adj.*	le plus pauvre, *m.*
Poorer, *adj.*	plus pauvre, *m.* or *f.*
Position, *n.*	place, *f.* position, *f.*
Possess (to), *v*	posséder, 1*st c.*
Post-Office, *n.*	poste, *f.*
Pound, *n.*	livre, *f.*
Powerful, *adj*,	puissant, *m.*
Praise (to), *v.*	louer, 1*st c.*
Pray (to), *v.*	prier, 1*st c.*
Present, *n.*	don, *m.* présent, *m.*
Present, *adj.*	présent, *m.*
Prefer (to), *v.*	préférer, 1*st c.*
Pretty, *adj.*	joli, *m.* jolie, *f.*
Prettier, *adj.*	plus joli, *m.*
Press, *n.*	armoire, *f.*
Price, *n.*	prix, *m.*
Prince, *n.*	prince, *m.*
Prize, *n.*	prix, *m.*
Prohibition, *n.*	dépense, *f.*
Promise, *n.*	promesse, *f.*
Promise (to), *v.*	promettre, 4*th c. irr.*
Pronounce (to), *v.*	prononcer, 1*st c.*
Protect (to), *v.*	protéger, 1*st c.*
Pudding, *n.*	poudding, *m.*
Punish (to), *v.*	punir, 2*d c. reg.*
Put (to), *v.*	mettre, 4*th c. irr.*
Put, *p. part.*	mis, *m.*
Put horses to (to), *v.*	atteler, 1*st c.*

Q.

QUARTER, *n.*	quart, *m.* trimestre, *m.*
Québec, *n.*	Québec. *m.*
Queen, *n.*	reine, *f.*
Quick. *adj.*	vif. *m.*
Quickly, *adv.*	vite.

R.

RAIN, *n.*	pluie, *f.*
Raise. (to), *v.*	lever. 1*st c.*
Read (to), *v.*	lire, 4*th c. irr.*
Read, *p. part.*	lu. *m.* e. *f.*
Reason, *n.*	raison. *f.*
Receive (to), *v.*	recevoir, 3*rd c. reg.*
Received, *p. part.*	reçu.
Recompensed, *p. part.*	récompensé, *m.*
Red, *adj.*	rouge. *m* or *f.*
Refuse (to), *v.*	refuser, 1*st c.*
Refusal, *n.*	refus. *m.*
Regulate. (to), *v.*	régler, 1*st c.*
Rejoice (to), *v.*	se réjouir, 2*d reg. refl.*
Relations, *n.*	parents, *m. pl.*
Relate, (to) *v.*	raconter, 1*st c.*
Remain (to) *v.*	rester, 1*st c.*
Rest (to), *v.*	se reposer, 1*st c. refl.*
Return (to), *v.*	retourner, 1*st c.* / revenir, 2*d c. irr.*
Returned, *p. part.*	retourné, revenu, *m.*
Rich. *adj.*	riche, *m.* or *f.*
Richer, *adj.*	plus riche. *m.* or *f.*
Richest, *adj.*	le plus riche, *m.*
Right, *n.*	raison. *f.*
Right, (to be), *v.*	avoir raison.
Right, *adj.*	juste, *m.* or *f.*
Rinse (to) *v.*	rincer, 1*st c.*
Rise (to), *v.*	se lever, 1*st c. refl.*
Rising, *n.*	lever, *m.*
River, *n.*	rivière, *f.* fleuve, *m.*
Road, *n.*	chemin, *m.*
Room, *n.*	chambre, *f.*
Rub out, (to), *v.*	effacer, 1*st c.*
Rule, (to) *v.*	régler, 1*st c.*

S.

SAD, *adj.*	triste, *m.* or *f.*
Said, *p. part.*	dit, *m.*
Sailor, *n.*	matelot, *m.*
Salt.	sel. *m.*
Same, *adj.*	même, *m.* or *f.*
Say (to), *v.*	dire, 4*th c. irr.*
School, *n.*	école. *f.* pension, *f.*
Scold, *v.*	gronder, 1*st c.*
Sea, *n.*	mer, *f.*
Season,	saison, *f.*
See (to), *v.*	voir, 3*rd c.*
Seen, *p. part.*	vu, *m.* e, *f.*
Sell (to),	vendre, 4*th c. reg.*
Set sail, (to), *v.*	mettre à la voile.
Set out, (to), *v.* / Set off, (to), *v.*	partir.
Sent, *p. part.*	envoyé. *m.*
Send (to), *v.*	envoyer, 1*st c. irr.*
Servant man, *n.*	domestique, *m.*
Servant girl, *n.*	domestique, *f.*
Servant girl, *n.*	servante, *f.*
Seven, *adj.*	sept.
Share, *n.*	part, *f.*
She. *pro.*	elle.
She who, *pro.*	celle qui.
Sheep, *n.*	brebis, *f.* mouton, *m.*
Sheet, *n.*	feuille, *f.* drap, m.
Shilling, *n.*	chelin, *m.*
Ship, *n.*	vaisseau, *m.*
Shirt, *n.*	chemise, *f.*
Shoe, *n.*	soulier. *m.*
Shoemaker, *n.*	cordonnier, *m.*
Short, *adj.*	court. *m.* courte, *f.*
Short time, *n.*	peu de temps.
Show (to),	montrer, 1*st c.*
Sick, *adj.*	malade, *m.*
Silver. *n.*	argent, *m.*
Since. *prep.*	depuis.
Sing. (to), *v.*	chanter, 1*st c.*
Sir, *n.*	monsieur, *m.*
Sister, *n.*	sœur. *f.*
Sit down (to), *v.*	s'asseoir, 3*d c. irr.*
Six, *adj.*	six.
Slate, *n.*	ardoise. *f.*
Slept. *p. part.*	dormi, *m.*
Slowly, *adv.*	lentement.
Small. *adj.*	petit, *m.*
Smaller, *adj.*	plus petit, moindre. *m*
Smallest, *adj.*	le plus petit, le moindre, *m.*
Snow (to), *v.*	neiger, 1*st c.*
Snow, *n.*	neige, *f.*
So, *adv.*	si.
So, *pro.*	le. *m.*
Soap, *n.*	savon, *m.*
Sold, *p. part.*	vendu, *m.*
Soldier *n.*	soldat. *m.*
So much, *adv.*	tant, (de)
So many, *adv.*	tant. (de.)
Some. *adj.*	quelque. *m.* or *f.*
Some, *art.*	du, de la. des.
Sometimes, *adv.*	quelquefois.
Some to me.	m'en.
Some to thee.	t'en.
Some to himself.	s'en.
Some where, *adv.*	quelque part.
Something.	quelque chose, *m.*
Son, *n.*	fils. *m.*
Soon. *adv.*	bientôt.
Sorry, *adj.*	fâché, *m.*
Soul, *n.*	âme. *f.*
Soup, *n.*	soupe, *f.*
Sovereign, *n.*	souverain. *m.*
Spain. *n.*	Espagne. *f.*
Sparrow, *n.*	moineau. *m.*
Speak (to), *v.*	parler. 1*st c.*
Speech. *n.*	discours, *m.*
Spell (to), *v.*	épeler, 1*st c.*
Spoil (to), *v.*	gâter, 1*st c.*
Spoken. *p. part.*	parlé.
Spoon. *n.*	cuillère, *f.*
Spring, *n.*	printemps, *m.*
Square, *n.*	place, *f.*
Square. *adj.*	carré, *m.*
Steal (to), *v.*	voler, 1*st c.*

Stick, *n.*	bâton, *m.*
Still, *adv.*	encore.
St. Lawrence, *n.*	St. Laurent, *m.*
Stout. *adj.*	gros, *m.* grosse, *f.*
Stocking, *n.*	bas, *m.*
Strange, *adj.*	étrange, *m.* or *f.* / singulier, *m*
Street, *n.*	rue, *f.*
Story, *n.*	histoire, *f.* / conte, *m.*
Straight, *adj.*	droit, *m.* e, *f.*
Strike out (to), *v.*	rayer, 1*st c.*
Study, *n.*	étude, *f.*
Study (to), *v.*	étudier, 1*st c.*
Sugar, *v.*	sucre, *m.*
Summer, *n.*	été, *m.*
Sun, *n.*	soleil, *m.*
Sunny, *adj.*	du soleil.
Sun rise, *n.*	le lever du soleil.
Sunset. *n.*	le coucher du soleil.
Sweet, adj.	doux, *m.* douce, *f.*

T.

TABLE, *n.*	table, *f.*
Tailor, *n.*	tailleur, *m.*
Tall, *adj.*	grand, *m.* grande, *f.*
Take (to), *v.*	mener, 1*st c.* / prendre, 4*th c. irr.*
Take away, *v.*	emporter, 1*st c.*
Take a walk (to), *v.*	se promener, 1*st c.*
Taken, *p. part.*	pris, *m.* mené. *m.* [*refl.*
Task, *n.*	devoir, *m.* tâche, *f.*
Tea, *n.*	thé, *m.*
Tear, *n.*	larme, *f.*
Tell (to), *v.*	dire, 4*th c.*
Ten.	dix.
Than, *con.*	que.
That, *pro.*	qui, que.
That, *dem. adj.*	ce, cet, cette, ces.
That, *dem. pro.*	celui, celle, ceia.
That, *con.*	que.
Thaw (to), *v.*	dégeler, 1*st c.*
That one. *dem. pro.*	celui-là. *m.* celle-là, *f.*
That which, *pro.*	celui qui, ce qui, *nom*
That which, *pro.*	celui que. ce que, *acc.*
The. *art.*	le, la. l', les.
Theatre. *n.*	théâtre, *m.*
Thee, *pro.*	te. toi.
The one, *dem. pro.*	celui, celle.
The one who or which, *pro.*	celui qui, *nom.*
The one whom or which. *pro.*	celui que, *acc.*
Their. *p. adj.*	leur, *m.* or *f.*
Theirs, *p. pro.*	le leur, *m.*, etc.
Them, *pro.*	les.
Them whom, *pro.*	ceux que, *m. acc.*
Then, *adv.*	alors.
There *adv.*	là.
There is, are, *v.*	il y a.
There is.	voici, il y a.
There are.	il y a.
These *dem. adj.*	ces.
These *dem. pro.*	ceux, celles.
They, *p. pro.*	ils, eux. elles.
They are.	ils sont, *m.*
They who, *pro.*	ceux qui, *m. nom.*
Thine, *p. pro.*	le tien, *m.*, etc.
Thing, *n.*	chose, *f.*
Things. *n.*	effets. *m. pl.*
Think of (to), *v.*	penser (à), 1*st c.*
Thirst, *n.*	soif. *f.*
Thirsty, *adj.*	altéré, *m.*
Thirsty (to be), *v.*	avoir soif.
This, *dem. adj.*	ce. cette. cet.
This. *dem. pro.*	celui, celle, ceci.
This one, *dem. pro.*	celui-ci. *m.* celle-ci, *f.*
Those, *dem. pro.*	ces. ceux, celles.
Thou, *pro.*	tu, toi.
Thought of, *p. part.*	pensé, *m.*
Three.	trois.
Throw (to), *v.*	jeter, 1*st c.*
Thunder, *n.*	tonnerre, *m.*
Thy, *p. adj.*	ton, ta, tes.
Tiger, *n.*	tigre, *m.*
Till, *adv.*	jusque.
Time, *n.*	temps, *m.*
Tired, *adj.*	las, *m.* fatigué, *m.*
To me, *pro.*	me, à moi.
To the. *art.*	au, à la, à l', aux.
To, *prep.*	à, chez.
Today, *adv.*	aujourd'hui.
To-morrow, *adv.*	demain.
Together, *adv.*	ensemble, avec.
Told, *p. part.*	dit, *m.*
Together, *prep.*	avec.
Too, *adv.*	aussi, trop.
Too much, *adv.* / Too many, *adv.*	trop.
Touch (to).	toucher, 1*st c.*
Towards, *prep.*	vers, envers.
Towel,	essuie-mains, *m.*
Town. *n.*	ville. *f.*
Tranquillity, *n.*	tranquillité, *f.*
Translated, *p. part.*	traduit, *m.*
Tree, *n.*	arbre, *m.*
True. *adj.*	vrai, *m.*
Trunk. *n.*	coffre, *m.*
Try (to), *v.*	essayer, 1*st c.*
Turn, *n.*	tour, *m.*
Two.	deux.
Twenty.	vingt.

U.

UNDER, *prep.*	sous.
Uncle, *n*	oncle, *m.*
Understand (to), v.	comprendre, 4*th c.*
Uneasy, *adj.*	inquiet, *m.*
Ungrateful, *adj.*	ingrat, *m.*
Unhappy, *adj,*	malheureux, *m.*
Unyoke (to), *v.*	dételer, 1*st c.*
Upon. *prep.*	sur.
Us. *pro.*	nous.
Us (to).	nous, à nous.
Useful, *adj.*	utile, *m.* or *f.*
Usually, *adv.*	ordinairement.

V.

VEGETABLES, *n.*	légumes. *m. pl.*
Very, *adv.*	très, fort.

Very much, *adv.*	beaucoup, fort.
Vessel, *n.*	vaisseau, *m.*
Vienna, *n.*	Vienne.
Virtuous, *adj.*	vertueux.
Violin, *n.*	violon, *m.*
Village, *n.*	village, *m.*
Vinegar,	vinaigre, *m.*
Visit, *n.*	visite, *f.*
Voyage, *n.*	voyage, *m.*
Voice, *n.*	voix, *f.*

W.

WAFER *n.*	pain-à-cacheter, *m.*
Wait for (to), *v.*	attendre, *4th c.*
WALL, *n*,	mur, *m.*
Walk (to).	se promener, 1*st c.*
Walking stick, *n.*	canne, *f.*
Want (to), *v.*	avoir besoin.
Warm, *n.* or *adj.*	chaud, *m.*
Wash (to), *v.*	laver, 1*st c.*
Watch, *n.*	montre, *f.*
Watered, *p. part.*	arrosé, *m.*
Watchmaker, *n.*	horloger.
Watch (to), *v.*	veiller, 1*st c.*
Water, *n.*	eau, *f.*
We, *pro.*	nous.
Weary, *adj.*	las, *m.*
Weather, *n.*	temps, *m.*
Week, *n.*	semaine, *f.*
Weep (to), *v.*	pleurer, 1*st c.*
Weigh (to), *v.*	peser, 1*st c.*
Well, *adv.*	bien.
What, *pro.*	que, quoi.
What time is it?	quelle heure est-il.
—(that which), *pr.*	ce qui, *nom.* ceque, *acc.*
When, *con.*	quand, lorsque.
Where, *adv.*	où.
Whether, *con.*	si, soit que.
Which, *nom. pro.*	qui.
Which, *acc. pro.*	que.
White, *adj.*	blanc, *m.*
Who, *pro.*	qui, lequel, *m.*
Whole, *adj. pro.*	tout, *m.* toute, *f.*
Whole world (the).	tout le monde.
Whom, *pro. abs.*	que, qui.
Whose, *pro.*	de qui, à qui.
(At whose house).	chez qui.
Why, *con.*	pourquoi.
Wicked, *adj.*	méchant, *m.*
Wickedness, *n.*	mechanceté, *f.*
Wife, *n*	femme, *f.* épouse, *f.*
Wild, *adj.*	sauvage, *m.* or *f.*
William, *n.*	Guillaume, *m.*
Wind, *n.*	vent, *m.*
Window, *n.*	fenêtre, *f.*
Wine, *n.*	vin, *m.*
Winter, *n.*	hiver, *m.*
Wipe (to), *v.*	essuyer, 1*st c.*
Wise, *adj.*	sage, *m.* or *f.*
Wisdom, *n.*	sagesse, *f.*
Wish for (to), *v.*	souhaiter, 1*st c.*
With, *prep.*	avec.
Without, *prep.*	sans.
Woman, *n.*	femme, *f.*
Word, *n.*	mot, m. parole, *f.*
Work (to), *v.*	travailler, 1*st c.*
Work, *n.*	travail, *m.* ouvrage, *m.*
World, *n*,	monde, *m.*
Worse, *adj.*	pire, *adj.* pis, *adv.*
Worst, *adj.*	le pire.
Worst, *adv.*	le pis.
Write (to), *v.*	écrire, *4th c. irr.*
Written, *p. pvrt.*	écrit, *m.*
Writing, *n.*	écriture, *f.*
Wrong (to be), *v.*	avoir tort.

Y.

YARD, *n.*	mètre, *m.* aune, *f*
Year, *n.*	an, *m.* année, *f.*
Yes, *adv.*	oui, si.
Yesterday, *adv.*	hier.
Yet, *adv.*	encore.
Yield (to), *v.*	céder, 1*st c.*
You, *pro.*	vous.
Young, *adj.*	jeune, *m.* or *f.*
Young lady, *n.*	demoiselle, *f.*
Your, *p. adj.*	votre, *s.* vos, *pl.*
Yours, *p. pro.*	le vôtre, *m.* etc.

SECOND PART.

GRAMMAR.—GRAMMAIRE.

OF LETTERS.—DES LETTRES.

ALPHABET.

A, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, j, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s, t, u, v, w, x, y, z.

A.

a without any accent, is the third person singular of the indicative of *Avoir.—Il a*, he has.

à with the grave accent, is a preposition meaning *to*, *at*.

a in *Août*, August, is not to be heard.

B.

b at the end of words, is almost never heard, except in proper names, and in the word *radoub*, re-fitting; *rumb*, Rhumb.

C.

c before *a*, *o*, *u*, also before a *consonant*, sounds like *k*.

c having a *cedilla*, thus, (*ç*) before the vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, takes the sound of *s*.

c after a vowel, sounds like *k*.

D.

d at the end of a word, when the next begins with a vowel, sounds like a *t*, as *grand animal*, great animal.

d at the end of a word is silent, except in *sud*, South; and also in proper names, *David*.

E.

e is mute or silent at the end of a word of more than one syllable, and if there be no accent over it, *table*.

e in words of one syllable, has the obtuse sound of *u* in c*u*t, b*u*t; as *je, me, de, que,* etc.

é with an acute accent, like *a* in d*a*te.

è with a grave accent, like *ay* in r*ay*.

ê something like the *è*, but longer.

(See page 9, Part I.)

F.

f is generally heard at the end of words, except in the plural nouns, *bœufs*, oxen; *œufs*, eggs; although heard in *bœuf* beef, ox; *œuf*, egg; their singular.

f in *neuf*, nine; is silent if followed by a consonant; and like *v* when before a vowel, or silent *h*; and also in *œuf*, when *œuf* is followed by an adjective, forming with it a compound word; as *œuf frais*, fresh egg.

f in *cerf*, stag; is silent; but is heard in *serf*, slave.

G.

g has the sound of *s*, in pleasure, before *e, i, y*.

g before *a, o, u*, is hard, as *g* in go.

g at the end of a word is silent.

g in *vingt*, twenty; *doigt*, finger; is silent.

gn partakes of the compound sound of *y* in yes.

g in *gangrène*, the first sounds like *k*.

H.

h in the body of a word is never heard; it is used after the letters, *c, l, p, r, t*.

ch before a vowel, sound like *sh*; but before a consonant, like *k*.

ch in words of Greek origin, before *a*, *o*, *u*, will sound like *k*; as *chaos*, chaos.

h when aspirate, requires that no word preceding, should be connected with it; but if called silent, mute, the foregoing letter or word, is pronounced upon it as if one word. The *h* aspirated will be seen at the end of First Part, page 73.

I.

I, or *i* having two dots, (*ï*) does not form a diphthong with the other vowels, as *naïf*, artless; pronounced like *knife*.

J.

j has the sound of *s* in pleasure, before all the vowels.

L.

l as in English.

ll liquid, something like *y* in you. So also the endings *eil*, *euil*, *ill*, *ail*, etc.

l is silent in *fils*, son.

M.

m after a vowel at the end of a word, is silent, except in foreign proper names; as *Jerusalem*.

m. before *b* and *p* forms with the preceding vowel, a nasal vowel: *comparaître*, *combattre*. See page 11, Part I.

N.

n at the end of a word or of one syllable, is generally silent, and forms with the foregoing vowel a nasal sound. Page 11.

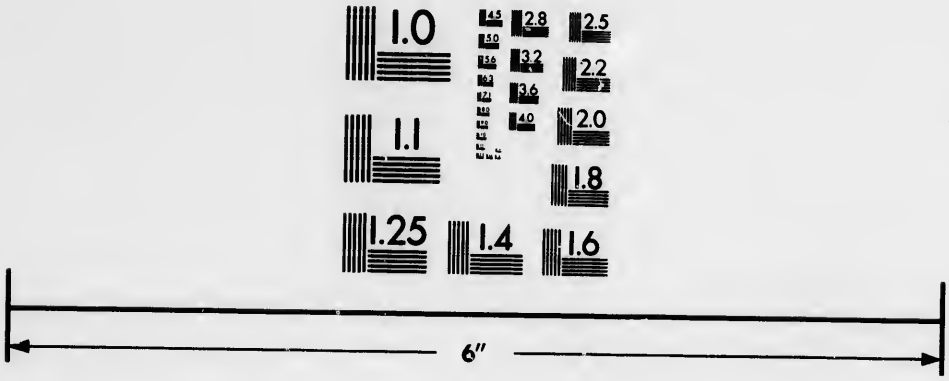
O.

o in *Laon*, a town; *paon*, peacock; *faon*, fawn; *sœur*, sister; *cœur*, heart; is not heard.

P.

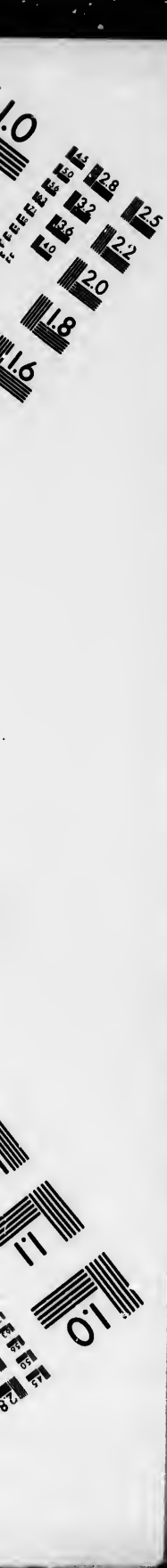
p in the body of a word is heard; but in *baptême*, baptism; *baptiser*, to baptise; *exempt*, free; *compte*, account; *prompt*,

IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503


1.0
2.8
3.2
3.6
4.0
2.5
2.2
2.0
1.8
1.6
1.1
1.0

quick; *sculpture; sept*, seven; *Baptiste; dompter*, to overcome; it is silent.

ph is pronounced like *f*, *phare*, light-house.

Q.

q in *coq*, cock; *cinq*, five; sounds like *k*.

q is silent in *Coq-d'Inde*, Turkey cock.

R.

r as in English.

r at the end of the verbs of the first conjugation is not heard; but in the second and third it is always. In words of such endings *ier, er*, the *r* is silent.

S.

s as in English; between two vowels sounds like *z*.

s at the end of a word is not generally heard, unless the word has but one syllable.

s ending a word, sounds like *z* on the next word commencing with a vowel or *h* silent; *mes enfants*, my children.

T.

t as in English; at the end of words it is silent, except in the following words: *accessit; brut; chut*, silence; *correct*, correct; *lest*, ballast; *est*, east; *suspect*, suspicious; *subit*, sudden.

th has no other sound than *t* itself.

ti in words ending with *tié, tier*, the *t* is hard; also in *tion* the *t* being preceded by an *s*: *question*; otherwise like *s*, *patient*: Still we say *chrétien*, christian; the *t* hard.

ti in verbs, before *ons, ez*, should be hard, except in *balbutier*, to stammer; *initier*, to initiate.

U.

u is generally silent after *q*.

V.

v as in English.

W.

w sounds like *v*; but in Newton, it has the value of *u*.

X.

x at the end of a word before the next with a vowel, like *z*: in the middle of a word, like *ks*; at the beginning, like *gz*.

x in *dix*, ten; *six* six; when they stand alone, sound like *ss*.

Y.

y like *i* or *ii*.

Z.

z as in English; in the second person plural of verbs it is silent, except if followed by a vowel.

The foregoing remarks should be considered more as a guide, than as a lesson.

ACCENTS AND OTHER SIGNS.

There are three accents in French.

The acute (´).

The grave (`).

The circumflex (^).

There is an apostroph (’), taking the place of a letter understood.

Diæresis or *tréma* (¨), or two little dots put over a vowel.

The *cedilla* or crooked mark, placed under the (ç).

The *hyphen* thus (-), to connect words.

THEIR USE.

The (´) is used only over the letter (*e*) if heard, and ending the syllable; as *été*, summer; *charmé*, delighted; and not followed by a silent syllable, as it would be in *père*.

The (`) over *a*, *e*, *u*, only ; over *à* in *là*, there ; and *à*, to, at ; on account of *la*, her, it, the ; and *a* has.

Over (*è*) when it precedes a syllable that is mute, as *père*, father ; *mère*, mother ; also in *accès*, fit ; *procès*, law suit ; *succès*, success ; *dès*, from, since ; on account of *des*, some or any, of the.

Over (*ù*) in *où*, where ; on account of *ou* or.

Words ending with *ge*, take the ′, and not the `, *piége*, share ; *siége*, seat.

The (^) over *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*, lengthens their sound, or else shows a distinction between two words spelt alike : *jeûne*, fast ; *jeune* young ; *tû*, past participle of *taire*, to be silent ; and *tu*, thou ; *crû*, grown ; *cru*, believed ; *dû*, owed, from *devoir* ; *du*, some, of the ; *mûr*, ripe ; *mur*, wall ; *sûr*, sure, sour ; *sur*, upon ; and *pû*, fed ; *pu*, been able.

APOSTROPHE OR ELISION.

a, *e*, *i*, are the only vowels that can be cut off from a word.

No suppression or elision of vowels, takes place before the words : *oui*, *huitième*, *huitaine*, *onze*, *onzième* ; *le huit du mois*, the eight of the month ; *le oui et le non*, the yes and no. Nor when the preceding monosyllable is not connected with the next by sense, as :

La traduction de (ici) *n'est pas difficile*,
The translation of (*ici*) is not difficult. But
Je viens d'ici, I come from here.

Neither would there be suppression of (*e*) in *je* in this instance :

Où pourrais-je être mieux que dans votre société ?

Where could I be better than in your company ? because it is not connected to *être* by the sense, as it would be in this case : *j'avais*, *j'étais*.

A.

(*a*), is suppressed only in *la*, article or pronoun, *her*, *it*, *the*, before a vowel or *h* silent.

I.

(*i*), only in *si*, meaning if, only before *il*, he, it; *ils*, they; *s'il*, if he; *s'ils*, if they.

E.

(*e*), is suppressed in the monosyllables: *me*, *de*, *te*, *ce*, *que*, *le*, *ne*; me, of, thee, this, that, the, it, not: *il m'aime*, he loves me; *qu'est-ce que c'est?* what is it?

LORSQUE, PUISQUE, QUOIQUE.

But in *lorsque*, when; *puisque*, since, because; *quoique*, although; the *e* mute is cut off only before *il*, *elle*, *on*, *un*, *une*, *ils*, *elles*; *lorsqu'il arriva*, when he arrived.

ENTRE, PRESQUE.

In *entre*, between, and *presque*, almost; when they form with the next word a compound word: *s'entr'aider*, to help one another; *un entr'actes*, an interlude; *presqu'île*, peninsula.

QUELQUE.

In *quelque*, some; only before *un*, *autre*; one, other; *quelqu'un*, some one; *quelqu'autre*, some other.

JUSQUE.

In *jusque*, until; before *ici*, here; *où*, there; *à*, to, at; *au*, at the; *jusqu'ici*, as far as here; *jusqu'aujourd'hui*, until to day.

For the sake of the euphony or sound, the (*e*) is suppressed in the following words: *grand'mère*, grand mother; *grand'messe*, high mass; *grand'chambre*, large room; *grand'chose*, great thing; *grand'peur*, great fear; if used in the plural the *noun* alone takes the plural.

OF THE CEDILLA.

The (¸) is put under the *c* to preserve to it the soft sound of (*s*) before *a*, *o*, *u*, for we know that *c* without a cedilla before those vowels has the hard sound of *k*; *façade*, facade; *leçon*, lesson, *il perça* he pierced.

OF THE DIÆRESIS OR TRÊMA.

The *tréma* (¨), is placed over *e*, *i*, *u*, only, to avoid their being pronounced in one syllable with the other vowels, as *naïf*, artless; *ciguë*, hemlock; *contiguë* adjoining.

OF THE HYPHEN.

The hyphen or *trait-d'union* (-), is used to connect compound words, to show their close relation; *aide-de-camp*, aide-de-camp; *chef-d'œuvre*, master piece; *aime-t-il?* does he like? To show that the pronoun (nominative, accusative or dative, going after the verb,) belongs to that verb; as *donnez-le-moi*, give it to me; to represent the suppression of a word: *vingt-huit*, twenty *and* eight; also to show multiplication *quatre-vingts*, eighty.

What precedes should be consulted carefully, and learned at the same time as the reading, a way which will render the dry study of it less irksome.

PARTS OF SPEECH.

There are *ten* parts of speech in French:

1. NOUN,	These vary in their inflections.	1. ADVERB,	These never change.
2. ARTICLE,		2. PREPOSITION,	
3. ADJECTIVE,		3. CONJUNCTION,	
4. PRONOUN,		4. INTERJECTION,	
5. VERB,			
6. PARTICIPLE,			

ARTICLE.

There is but one article as given with its genders and numbers.

The article is *the*: LE, m. s., LA, f. s., L', m. or f. s., LES, m. or f. pl.

(See page 15, 1st Part.)

LE, DU, AU.

Le, the ; *du*, of the, some ; *au*, to the, at the ; are masculine and singular, and used before masculine nouns beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirate : *au fruit*, to the fruit ; *le cheval*, the horse ; *du roi*, of the King.

LA, DE LA, A LA.

La, the ; *de la*, of the, any ; *à la*, to the ; are feminine and singular and used only before nouns feminine, beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirate : *la reine* the Queen ; *à la fleur*, to the flower ; *de la saison*, of the season.

L', DE L', A L'.

L', the ; *de l'*, of the, some ; *à l'*, to the ; are masculine or feminine singular, used before a noun beginning with a vowel or *h* silent : *l'homme*, the man ; *de l'enfant*, of the child ; *à l'histoire*, to the history.

LES, DES, AUX.

Les, the ; *des*, of the, some ; *aux*, to the ; are plural, masculine or feminine, and used before a noun beginning either with a vowel or consonant, an *h* aspirate or silent : *les élèves*, the pupils ; *des prunes*, of the plums ; *aux hameaux*, to the hamlets ; *aux hommes*, to the men.

De le, *à le*, *à les*, *de les* , can never be used as articles.

SUBSTANTIF OU NOM.—SUBSTANTIVE OR NOUN.

DES GENRES.—OF GENDERS.

There are but *two* genders in French, the masculine and feminine ; so, inanimate objects must be of either.

A GENERAL RULE.

MASCULINE TERMINATIONS.—*a, i, o, u, (é), a consonant :*

Lundi,	Monday.	*Jeudi*,	Thursday.
Mardi,	Tuesday.	*Vendredi*,	Friday.
Mercredi,	Wednesday.	*Samedi*,	Saturday.

LES MOIS.—THE MONTHS.

Janvier,	January.	*Juillet,*	July.
Février,	February.	*Août,*	August.
Mars,	March.	*Septembre,*	September.
Avril,	April.	*Octobre,*	October.
Mai,	May.	*Novembre,*	November.
Juin,	June.	*Décembre,*	December.

FEMININE TERMINATIONS.—*aie, ie, ue, eue, oie, ée, té, ion, son, ance, ense, anse, ière, tié ;* also a double *consonant* with *e* mute ; *nne, tte, sse :*

la vérité,	the truth.	*la boue,*	the mud.
la raison,	the reason.	*l'ignorance,*	the ignorance.
une trompette,	a trumpet.	*la bassesse,*	the baseness.
la vie,	the life.	*la persienne,*	the windo' blind.

REM.—Generally, *é* accented not immediately preceded by (*t*), ends masculine nouns ; *thé,* tea ; *dé,* thimble, masculine.

SECOND REM.—Yet, nouns ending with *ée,* of Greek origin, are often masculine ; *lycée,* lyceum.

There being many exceptions, it would be losing a precious and important time in trying to commit them to memory : it is only when the ear becomes familiar with the words, that one is able to detect the two different genders ; however, the above rule will prove of the greatest importance.

DU PLURIEL DANS LES SUBSTANTIFS.

OF THE PLURAL IN NOUNS.

1. Nouns in the singular generally take (*s*) to form their plural ; *enfant,* child ; *enfants,* children.

S, X, Z. (no change.)

2. Those ending with *s, x, z,* do not change : *un nez,* a nose ; *des nez,* some noses ; *une souris,* a mouse ; *des souris,* some mice.

AU, EU, (with) X.

3. Those with *au*, *eu*, take (*x*), *château*, castle ; *feu*, fire ; *tuyau*, pipe. *bleu*, blue ; takes (*s*) *bleus* ; *des bleus de ciel*, cakes of paint of the colour of the skies.

OU (with) S.

4. Those in *ou*, take (*s*), *sou*, *sous*, halfpenny.

Exceptions : *bijou*, jewel ; *caillou*, pebblestone ; *chou*, cabbage ; *genou*, knee ; *hibou*, owl ; *pou*, louse ; which take *x*.

AL in AUX.

5. Adjectives or nouns ending with *al*, change into *aux* : *cheval*, horse ; *chevaux*, horses : *général*, general ; *généraux*, generals.

6. But *bal*, ball, *carnaval*, carnival ; *régal*, regal, feast ; *cérémonial*, order of ceremony ; take an (*s*).

AIL (with) S.

7. Those in *ail*, take (*s*), *éventail*, fan ; *détail*, detail.

But *bail*,	bail,	make their plural in	*baux*.	Plural.
émail,	enamel,		*émaux*.	
corail,	coral,		*coraux*.	
soupirail,	air-hole,		*soupiraux*.	
travail,	work,		*travaux*.	

8. *Bétail*, cattle ; *bercail*, sheepfold ; have no plural ; *bestial*, beast, beastly ; makes *bestiaux*, cattle.

	Sing.	1st. Pl.	2nd. Pl.
9.	*aïeul*,	*aïeux*, ancestors.	*aïeuls*, great grand fathers.
	ciel,	*cieux*, heavens.	*ciels*, skies, testers of beds.
	œil,	*yeux*, eyes.	*œils-de-bœuf*, oval windows.
	travail,	*travaux*, works.	*travails*, apparel used for shoeing vicious horses.

10. REM.—Nouns ending with *ant* or *ent* may drop the *t* in the plural, provided the words have more than one syllable.

ADJECTIFS.—ADJECTIVES.

11. In French, adjectives like the article must agree in gender and in number with the noun to which they relate : *un bel enfant, une belle enfant ; de grands travaux, de jolies gravures.*

DU FÉMININ DANS LES ADJECTIFS. — OF THE FEMININE IN ADJECTIVES.

(1.)

12. Adjectives ending with *e* mute in the masculine, remain unchanged in the feminine : *aimable*, m. *aimable*, f. amiable ; *honnête*, m. *honnête*, f. honest ; except *maître, traître*, m. master, traitor ; *maîtresse, traîtresse*, f.

(2.)

13. Those ending with a consonant *simply* add *e* mute for their feminine : *grand*, m. *grande*, f. tall, large ; *petit*, m. *petite*, f. small, little.—Except :

		Their fem. is :
absous,	absolved,	*absoute.*
dissous,	dissolved,	*dissoute.*
bénin,	benevolent,	*bénigne.*
malin,	malignant,	*maligne.*
épais,	thick,	*épaisse.*
frais,	fresh,	*fraîche.*
paysan,	peasant,	*paysanne.*

(3.)

14. Those ending with a vowel other than (*e*) mute, take one to form their feminine ; Example : *joli, jolie ; aimé, aimée ;* pretty, loved ; except, *coi, favori* ; silent, favorite ; whose feminine is *coite, favorite.*

(4.)

15. Those ending with *el, eil, en, on, et, ot, os, as* ; form their feminine by doubling the last consonant and taking *e* mute :

Masc.	Fem.	
cruel,	*cruelle*,	cruel.
pareil,	*pareille*,	alike.

Masc.	Fem.	
ancien,	*ancienne,*	old.
bon,	*bonne,*	good.
net,	*nette,*	clean.
sot,	*sotte,*	foolish.
gros,	*grosse,*	big, stout.
gras,	*grasse,*	fat; except *ras,*

close shaven; which makes *rase;* and *nul, gentil,* which make *nulle gentille;* null, genteel.

(5.)

16. Those ending with *plet, cret, iet, er, ier,* take *e* mute and a grave accent on the *e* before (*t*) or *r*;

Masc.		Masc.		Fem.
complet,	complet.	*replet,*	stout, fat.	*replète.*
inquiet,	uneasy.	*premier,*	first.	*première.*
secret,	secret	*cher,*	dear.	*chère.*

(6.)

17. Those in:

" *x* change into *se* *heureux, heureuse,* happy; except:

doux,	mild, sweet,	*douce.*
faux,	false,	*fausse.*
roux,	reddish,	*rousse.*
vieux,	old,	*vieille,* which

follow the general rule in an irregular manner.

" *f* change into *ve, neuf, neuve,* new.
" *g* " *gue, long, longue,* long.
" *gu* take *ë, contigu, contiguë,* adjoining.
" *ou* change into *olle, fou, folle,* foolish.
" *eau* " *elle, beau, belle,* fine, beautiful.
" *c* " *que, turc, turque,* turkish; *public, publique,* public; *caduc, caduque,* declining; *Franc,* French; *franque. Grec,* Greek; makes *grecque.* Except *Franc,* open, sincere, *franche; blanc,* white, *blanche; sec,* dry, *sèche.*

EUR into EUSE.

(7.)

18. Those in *eur* make *euse : danseur, danseuse,* dancer ; *trompeur, trompeuse,* deceitful.

TEUR into TRICE.

(8.)

19. Those in *teur* make *trice* ; *accusateur, accusatrice,* accuser ; *bienfaiteur, bienfaitrice,* benefactor; *instituteur, institutrice,* school master ; except *tricoteur, tricoteuse,* knitter ; *flatteur, flatteuse,* flatterer ; *menteur, menteuse,* liar.

EUR into ERESSE.

(9.)

20. The following in *eur* make *eresse : demandeur, demanderesse,* plaintiff ; *défendeur, défenderesse,* defendant ; *enchanteur, enchanteresse,* enchanting ; *pécheur, pécheresse,* sinner ; *vengeur, vengeresse,* avenger, avenging.

ERIEUR—E.

(10.)

21. Those in *érieur,* simply take *e* mute ; *supérieur-e, inférieur-e ;* and so do *majeur,* major ; *mineur,* minor ; *meilleur,* better.

(11.)

The following are very irregular :

22. *Ambassadeur,* ambassador, *ambassadrice ; empereur,* emperor, *impératrice ; gouverneur,* governor, *gouvernante ; chanteur,* singer, *chanteuse,* and *cantatrice ; chasseur,* hunter, *chasseuse* and *chasseresse ; serviteur,* servant, *servante.*

EUR.—(*masc.* or *fem.*)

(12.)

23. Moreover, those in *eur,* which express professions generally exercised by men, do not change for the feminine, as they remain masculine ; *docteur* doctor ; *professeur,* professor.

Cette dame est un bon auteur. That lady is a good author.

Témoin, witness ; has no feminine.

châtain,	chestnut color.	Are not used with feminine nouns, so that they have no feminine endings.
fat,	foppish.	
dispos,	ready.	

EAU, OU.

Those ending with *eau*, *ou*, have also a second masculine, *el*, *ol*, used when the word begins with a vowel or *h* silent : *un vieil homme ; nouvel habit ; fol espoir ;* and *vieux* which has *vieil*.

The feminine of such nouns often used as adjectives : *duc*, *maître*, *marquis*, *prince*, etc., whose feminine are : *duchesse*, *maîtresse*, *marquise*, *princesse ;* duchess, mistress, marchioness, princess ; must be looked for in a good dictionary.

FORMATION OF THE PLURAL IN ADJECTIVES.

24. Adjectives form their plural exactly like nouns : that is to say, that the *masculine* adjectives are subjected to the same exceptions as nouns,—but with regard to the feminine adjectives, they invariably take (*s*.)—See Substantive, pages 93 and 94.

AL.

25. Adjectives ending with *al*, qualifying feminine substantives only as : *bénéficial*, *diagonal*, etc., do not have a plural masculine termination.

26. And the following which instead of changing *al* into *aux* take *s*, are :

amical,	friendly.	*glacial*,	frigid.
bancal,	bandy-legged.	*initial*,	initial.
fatal,	fatal.	*labial*,	labial.
frugal,	frugal, (also) *aux*.	*matinal*,	early.
filial,	filial.	*naval*,	naval.
théâtral.	theatrical.	*nasal*,	nasal.

IMPORTANT OBSERVATION.

Although it has been said that adjectives agree in gender and number with the nouns to which they relate :

Demi, half ; agrees with its noun in gender *only*, and when it follows it :

Une demi-heure. Deux heures et demie.

Nu, naked ; agrees in gender and number, when it follows its noun.

Nu-pieds,	Bare foot.
Tête nue,	Bare headed.

Feu, late [illegible]act ; agrees only when there is no word intervening with [illegible] or its noun :

La feue Reine,	The late Queen.
Feu votre mère,	Your late mother.

OF COMPARATIVES IN ADJECTIVES.

27. There are three sorts of comparatives :
(1.) *Equality.* (2.) *Superiority,* and (3.) *Inferiority.*

EQUALITY.

28. That of *Equality* is made by putting *aussi*, as, and *autant* as much ; before the adjective in the positive, and *que*, as ; after the adjective.

EXAMPLE :

Il était aussi studieux que sage,
He was as studious as good.
Cicéron était autant estimé qu' admiré,
Cicero was as much esteemed as admired.

SUPERIORITY.

29. That of *Superiority*, by placing *plus*, more ; before the adjective, and *que*, than ; after the adjective :

L'Angleterre est plus peuplée que le Canada,
England is more populous than Canada.

INFERIORITY.

30. That of *Inferiority*, by putting *moins*, less; before the adjective, and *que*, than; after it:

L'Angleterre est moins grande que le Canada,
England is less large than Canada.

or by using the verb negatively, and putting *si*, so; before the adjective, and *que*, as; after:

L'Angleterre n'est pas si grande que le Canada,
England is not so large as Canada.

REM.—*Plus, moins, aussi, autant,* and *si*, must be repeated before every adjective in the comparative; but *que* comes alone and last:

Elle est plus jolie, plus modeste et plus sage que sa sœur;
She is prettier, more modest, and better than her sister.

Unless several nouns or pronouns were brought for comparison, as:

Il est plus intelligent, que lui, qu'elle et qu'eux.
He is more intelligent than he, she, and they.

in which case *que* must be repeated.

OF SUPERLATIVES.

31. There are *two* sorts of superlatives:

The *Superlative absolute* and *Superlative relative.*

The *Superlative absolute* expresses the highest or lowest degree without any comparison.

The *Superlative relative* expresses comparison.

SUPERLATIVE ABSOLUTE.

32. The *Superlative absolute,* is formed by placing such adverbs as *fort,* very; *très,* very; *extrêmement,* extremely; before the adjective in the *positive;* and also the invariable *le plus* and *le moins,* as:

Il est fort content de vous voir, He is very much pleased to see you.
Je vous suis extrêmement obligé, I am extremely obliged to you.
Elle court le moins, She runs the least.

SUPERLATIVE RELATIVE.

33. The *Superlative relative* is formed by placing the article *le, la, l', les,* or *mon, ton, cet,* etc., before the *comparative of inferiority* or of *superiority,* as :

Le plus savant, The most learned.
Mon plus joli livre, My finest book.
Cet enfant est le moins désagréable de la classe,
This child is the least desagreeable in the class.

IRREGULAR COMPARATIVES

34. The following adjectives are irregular :

Bon, good ;	*meilleur,*	better ;	*le meilleur,*	the best.
Mauvais, bad ;	*pire,*	worse ;	*le pire,*	the worst.
Petit, small ;	*moindre,*	less ;	*le moindre,*	the least.

ADVERBS.

Bien, well ;	*mieux,*	better ;	*le mieux,*	the best.
Mal, badly ;	*pis,*	worse ;	*le pis,*	the worst.
Peu, little ;	*moins,*	less ;	*le moins,*	the least.

---

35. Better, meaning more good, is *meilleur.*
Better, " more well, is *mieux.*
Worse, " more bad, is *pire,*
Worse, " more badly, is *pis.*
Less, " more small, is *moindre.*
Less, " more little, (quantity), is *moins.*

However, we can say *plus mauvais, plus petit, plus mal ;* but we cannot say : *plus bon,* nor *plus bien,* nor *plus peu.*

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

36. There are two sorts of numeral adjectives: the *Cardinal* and *Ordinal*.

THE CARDINAL ARE:

[REM.—The numbers should be learned across each line, and not up and down.]

1. un.	11. onze.	
2. deux, *x* silent.	12. douze.	
3. trois, *s* silent.	13. treize.	
4. quatre.	14. quatorze, *u*, sil.	30. trente.
5. cinq.	15. quinze, *u* sil.	40. quarante, *u* s.
6. six, *x* like *ss*.	16. seize.	50. cinquante, *u* s.
7. sept, *p* silent.	17. dix-sept, *p* sil.	60. soixante, *x* like *ss*.
8. huit.	18. dix-huit.	70. soixante-dix.
9. neuf.	19. dix-neuf.	
10. dix, *x* like *ss*.	20. vingt, *gt* sil.	

80. quatre-vingts, *gts* sil. 90. quatre-vingt-dix. 100. cent, *t* sil.
1,000. mille. 1,000,000. million

REM.—The *x* and the *s* of the foregoing numbers must be pronounced like (*z*) on the next vowel or *h* silent:

Dix hommes. *Deux enfants.*

When followed by a consonant, the *x*, *s*, *t*, *f*, *q*, must be silent: *cinq plumes, six garçons.*

The *f* in *neuf*, takes the sound of *v* before a vowel or *h* silent: *neuf hommes, neuf enfants.*

37. We say:

21. vingt et un.	22. vingt-deux.
31. trente et un.	33. trente-trois.
41. quarante et un.	44. quarante-quatre.
51. cinquante et-un.	55. cinquante-cinq.
61. soixante et un.	66. soixante-six.
81. quatre-vingt-un, but:	87. quatre-vingt-sept.

[Without the conjunction *et*, but a hyphen.] -huit. -neuf.

38. We say :

Soixante-dix,	60 and 10.	Quatre-vingt-quatorze,	80 and 14.
Soixante-onze,	60 and 11.	Quatre-vingt-quinze,	80 and 15.
Soixante-douze,	60 and 12.	Quatre-vingt-seize,	80 and 16.
Soixante-treize,	60 and 13.	Quatre-vingt-dix-sept,	80 and 17.
		Quatre-vingt-dix-huit,	80 and 18.
		Quatre-vingt-dix-neuf,	80 and 19.

VINGT—CENT.

[Cardinal numbers do not change at all in their terminations; we except *vingt et cent.*]

39. Rem.—*Vingt* and *cent* multiplied by a number take *s*;

Quatre-vingts, 80, or 4...20's; deux cents, 200, or 2...100's; but if *vingt* and *cent* are followed by another number, they then drop the *s* : quatre-vingt-dix, 90; deux-cent-un, 201.

Vingt and *cent* used for *vingtième* and *centième*, never take the *s* : *Page quatre-vingt*, page 80; *Exercice cinq cent*, exercise 500; used for : *Page quatre-vingtième*, *Exercice cinq centième*.

MILLE.

40. *Mille*, 1,000, is written *mille*, *mil*, *mille* :

(1.) *Mille*, 1,000, without the *s*, means that number of 10,00;

(2.) *Mille*, (*a mile*), takes *s* : *deux milles*, two miles;

(3.) *Mil*, 1,000, used for the years of the Christian Era : *mil-huit-cent-cinquante-neuf*, 1859.

QUINT (for) CINQ.

41. Rem.—Instead of *cinq*, we write *quint*, fifth; in speak- of Pope, Sixtus the Fifth, and Charles of the Fifth of Spain : *Sixte-Quint*, *Charles-Quint*.

ORDINAL NUMBERS.

42. They are formed from the cardinal by adding *ième*, and dropping the *e* of some of the cardinal or changing the *f* into *v*.

Ordinal adjectives do all agree in gender and in number with the nouns to which they relate : *mes deux premières leçons*, my two first lessons.

The French use the cardinal numbers, except for the *first*,

instead of the ordinal for the days of the weeks and titles of sovereigns. Examples:

Le premier du mois,	the first of the month.
Le deux,	the second.
Henri Quatre,	Henry the Fourth.

[Rem.—The numbers are designed to be learned across each line, and not up and down.]

1st unième-*premier.*	11th onzième.	
2d second-*deuxième*	12th douzième.	
3d troisième.	13th treizième.	30th trentième.
4th quatrième.	14th quatorzième.	40th quarantième.
5th cinquième.	15th quinzième.	50th cinquantième.
6th sixième.	16th seizième.	60th soixantième.
7th septième.	17th dix-septième.	70th soixante-dixième
8th huitième.	18th dix-huitième.	
9th neuvième.	19th dixneuvième.	
10th dixième.	20th vingtième.	
80th quatre-vingtième.		100th centième.
90th quatre-vingt-dixième.		1,000th millième.
		1,000,000th millionième.

43.

21st vingt	et	unième	22nd	- deuxième.
31st trente	et		33rd	- troisième.
41st quarante	et		44th	- quatrième
51st cinquante	et		55th	- cinquième
61st soixante	et		66th	- sixième.
81st quatre-vingt	et		87th	- septième.
			88th	- huitième.
			89th	- neuvième.

44.

Soixante-dixième,	70th	Quatre-vingt-quatorzième,	94th.
Soixante-onzième,	71st	Quatre-vingt-quinzième,	95th
Soixante-douzième,	72d	Quatre-vingt-seizième,	96th
Soixante-treizième,	73d	Quatre-vingt-dix-septième,	97th
		Quatre-vingt-dix-huitième,	98th
		Quatre-vingt-dix-neuvième,	99th

NUMERAL NOUNS.

Une dizaine, half a score.
Une quinzaine, three quarters of a score, a fortnight.
Une vingtaine, a score.
Une trentaine, a score and a half.
Une centaine, five scores.
Un million, 1,000,000.
La moitié, the half.
Le quart, the quarter or 4th part.
Le tiers, third part.
Le triple, the triple.
Un millier, 1,000.

PREMIER, UNIÈME; SECOND, DEUXIÈME.

Premier, is used with nouns, as : *premier livre ;*
Unième, with compounds of ten, as : *vingt et unième ;*
Second, with nouns only ; *Second livre.*
Deuxième, with compounds of ten, and also with nouns ;
Vingt-deuxième livre, 22d book ;—*les vingt premiers livres*, the 21st books; because *premiers*, relates to *livres* only.

With nouns, *second* when but two ; *deuxième*, when more than two.

Cet ouvrage a deux tomes ; voici le second.
" *vingt* " " *le deuxième.*

DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES.

45. The *demonstrative adjectives* are those that precede nouns :

(See page 15.)

The are : *ce*, this or that, *m. s.*, before a consonant or *h* aspirate.
Ce garçon, This boy.
cet, this or that, *m. s.*, before a vowel or *h* silent.
Cet instituteur, This schoolmaster.
Cet homme, This man.
cette, this or that, *f. s.*, before any noun feminine.
Cette pomme, This apple.
Cette ardoise, That slate.

ces, these or those, *pl. m.* or *f.*, before any plural noun.
Ces élèves, Those pupils.

46. Rem.—In order to express *this* or *that*, the French, not having two different words, make use of the adverbs *ci*, here; *là*, there; placed after nouns, preceded by the *demonstrative adjective*, to represent proximity or distance:

Cette page-ci *est plus longue que cette page*-là,
This page is longer than *that* page.

The *e* of (*ce*), the adjective, is never cut off.

POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

47. The *possessive adjectives* are those which precede nouns, to show the possession; they agree in gender and in number with the nouns they precede, and not otherwise; they can never stand alone. They are:

	Masc. Sing.	Fem. Sing.	Pl., Masc. Sing.
My,	*mon*,	*ma*,	*mes*.
Thy,	*ton*,	*ta*,	*tes*.
Its, his her,	*son*,	*sa*,	*ses*.
Our,	*notre*,	*notre*,	*nos*.
Your,	*votre*,	*votre*,	*vos*.
Their,	*leur*,	*leur*,	*leurs*.

Son père et sa mère sont arrivés,
Her father and mother have arrived.

48. Rem.—They must be repeated like the article, before every noun, where they should, and never be understood as in English.

Rem.—*Mon, ton, son*, although masculine, must be used in the place of *ma, ta, sa*, which are feminine, when the feminine nouns begin with a *vowel* or *h* silent, as the vowel *a* can only be suppressed in one instance: *ton âme*, f., thy soul; *son humeur*, f., his temper; *mon amitié*, f., my friendship.—See page 91.

INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES.

49. They are :

Chaque, m. or f. s., each, every ; *nul*, m. *nulle*, f., null, none ;
Même, m. or f. same, like ; *quelque*, m. or f., some few ;
Quel, m., *quelle*, f., which, what ; *tel*, m., *telle*, f., such ;
[*un tel*, m. such a.
Plusieurs, m. or f. pl., several ; *aucun*, m. *aucune*, f., not one,
Quelconque m. or f., whatever, after a noun ; [not any.
Tout, m., *toute*, f., *tous*, m. pl., *toutes*, f. pl., every, all.

50.—Rem.—*Nul, aucun*, require the verb to take the negative particle *ne*, as they are negative : *nul garçon n'est venu*, no boy came ; unless they accompany a verb interrogative, as :

Croyez-vous qu'aucun enfant le fasse ?
Do you think any child will do it ?

Nul, aucun, plusieurs and *tel* when not followed by a noun, must be considered as pronouns, chiefly representing persons, unless otherwise expressed.

TOUT, (whole), ALL.

Tout is either, a *noun, pronoun*, an *adjective*, or an *adverb*.

1. A *Noun* when the article comes before it ; in the plural it preserves its *t* ; *les touts*.

2. A *Pronoun*, absolute, relates to things and is singular ; *tout est perdu* ; not absolute, relates to persons and things, and agrees :

Vos livres sont tous ici. (*Les dames,*) *Toutes sont venues.*

3. An *Adjective*, may or may not be followed by the article, agrees with its noun :

Tout homme, *Tous les enfants.*

4. An *Adverb*, means quite, altogether : *tout prêt*, quite ready ; although an adverb, it takes the feminine singular or plural terminations, if the feminine adjective following it, begins with a consonant or *h* aspirate.

Cette dame est toute surprise.

MEME.

Même, after a verb, or after several nouns is an adverb and means *even*, *also*; after a single noun or pronoun, although it can be turned by *even*, in English, it is an adjective in French, as :

Ces murs mêmes peuvent avoir des yeux,

These very walls, *or* Even those walls may have eyes

QUELQUE.

(1.) QUELQUE, followed by a noun or an adjective and its noun, is written in one word and agrees :

Quelques bons livres, Some *or* a few good books.

(2.) *Quelque*, followed by an adjective alone, or an adverb, remains in one word and invariable :

Quelque bons qu'ils soient, However good they may be ;— it then governs the subjunctive mood.

(3.) *Quelque*, followed by a verb, is written in two words, and *quel* agrees, but *que* does not :

Quelles que soient vos peines, armez-vous de courage.

Whatever your troubles may be, arm yourself with fortitude.

REM.—*Quelque* is sometimes translated by *whatever*, *however* ; it is sometimes an *adverb* or an *adjective* ; written in two words or in one.

FORMATION OF WORDS.

51. English words whose terminations are :

ace,	*ice,*	face, préface,	justice,
ade,	*ude,*	façade,	solitude,
ance,	*ence,*	ignorance	adhérence,
ant,	*ent,*	élégant,	accident,
ile,	*ile,*	docile,	ridicule,
acle,	*al,*	obstacle,	animal,
ble,	*ge,*	fable,	âge,
ine,	*ion,*	machine,	action, nation ;

are the same in the French, with the exception of some accents which the English do not use.

ALSO :

52. Those in ary,	make *aire*,	necessarry,	*nécessaire*
ory,	make *oire*,	accessory,	*accessoire.*
or, our,	make *eur*,	candour,	*candeur.*
ous,	make *eux*,	famous,	*fameux.*
ty,	make *té*	beauty,	*beauté.*
y,	make *ie*,	fury,	*furie.*
ty,	with a consonant before make *tie.*		
Modesty,		*Modestie.*	

OF PRONOUNS.

53. There are five sorts of pronouns ; they are :

Pronoms personnels,	Personal,	Pronouns.
Pronoms démonstratifs,	Demonstrative,	
Pronoms possessifs,	Possessive,	
Pronoms relatifs,	Relative,	
Pronoms indéfinis,	Indefinite,	

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

54. They are :

1st persons.		2nd persons.	
je,	I.	*tu*,	thou,
me,	me or to me.	*te*,	thee, to thee.
moi,	I, me or to me.	*toi*,	thou, thee, to thee.
nous,	we or us.	*vous*,	you, to you.
3rd persons.		**3rd persons.**	
il,	he, it.	*le*,	it, him, *m.*
elle,	she, it, her.	*la*,	it, her, *f.*
lui,	he, him, to him.	*les*,	them, *pl.*, *m.* or *f.*
ils,	they, *m.*	*leur*,	to them, *pl. m.* or *f.*
elles,	they, *f.*, them.	*en*,	some, of it, of them, *m.* or *f.*, *pl.* or *s.*
eux,	they, *m.*, them, *m.*		
y,	to it, to them, *m.* or *f.*, *pl.* or *s.*		

se, himself, herself, themselves; to himself, to herself, to themselves, *pl.* or *s.*

soi, oneself.

A VERY IMPORTANT REMARK.

THEIR USE AND PLACE.

(For the order in which they come, see pages 63, 64.)

Personal pronouns used with verbs only: *je, me, tu, te, il, se, ils, le, la, les, leur, y, en.*

Personal pronouns used with or without verbs: *moi, toi, lui, elle, elles, eux, nous, vous.*

Personal pronouns used with prepositions: *moi, toi, lui, elle, elles, eux, nous, vous, soi,* oneself.

55. *Personal pronouns* used with verbs only, always precede their verbs, whether as nominative, datives or accusatives:

Il te l'a dit, He told it to thee.

except as nominatives, when the verbs are used interrogatively, as:

Avons-nous ri? Did we laugh?

Rirons-nous? Shall we laugh?

As objects, the verb being in the imperative affirmative, they follow it, as:

Parlez-leur-en, Speak to them about it.

REM.—*le, la, l' les,* personal pronouns, must not be confounded with *le, la, l', les,* articles. The pronouns go with verbs, whilst the articles go with nouns:

Je la vois, nous les aimons. Le Roi, la Reine, les enfants.

I see her, we love them. The King, the Queen, the children.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

56. The *Demonstrative pronouns* are very different from the demonstrative adjectives, because they do not precede nouns but verbs or relative pronouns, and take the gender and number of the nouns they represent.—See p. 19.

They are:	*ce,*	m. pl. or s.,	this, that or *it.*
	celui	m. s.	that, the one.
	celle,	f. s.,	that, the one.
	ceux,	m. pl.	those, the ones.
	celles,	f. pl.,	those, the ones.

Ceci, this (thing,) *m. s.* *Cela,* that (thing,) *m. s.*

57. After *celui, celle, ceux, celles,* we use *ci* and *là* to show proximity or distance, they represent things or persons.

Ce, must not be confounded with *ce* the adjective; for *ce* the pronoun, precedes only verbs or relative pronouns, and has no other termination, and the (*e*) of it can be cut off; whilst *ce*, the adjective, goes before nouns only and never changes.

58. Moreover, *ce* takes the place of *il, elle, ils, elles* when preceding *être*, to be; followed by a noun or pronoun determined. So we say:

Ce sont des personnes aimables,
They are amiable persons.
Ce que je préfère c'est l'humanité,
That which I like best is humanity.

—

Ce dont je parle, — That of which I speak.
C'est un malheur, — It is a misfortune.

CELUI, ETC.—CECI.

Celui, celle, ceux, celles may represent persons or things as in English; they must take the place of a noun expressed before and determined.

Ceci and *cela*, represent only things pointed at.

Ceci est bon, cela est mauvais,
This is good, that is bad.

These two cannot be used like the preceding ones.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

59. The *Possessive pronouns* express possession and agree in gender and in number with the nouns for which they stand.

They are:

Masc.	Fem.	
le mien,	*la mienne,*	mine.
le tien,	*la tienne,*	thine.
le sien,	*la sienne,*	his, hers.
le nôtre,	*la nôtre,*	ours.

Masc.	Fem.	
le vôtre,	*la vôtre,*	your.
le leur,	*la leur,*	theirs.

(See page, 18.)

Masc. pl.	Fem. pl.	
les miens,	*les miennes,*	mine.
les tiens,	*les tiennes,*	thine.
les siens,	*les siennes,*	his, hers.
les nôtres,	*les nôtres,*	ours.
les vôtres,	*les vôtres,*	yours.
les leurs,	*les leurs.*	theirs.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

60. The Relative Pronouns are divided into *relative* and *absolute.*—See page 16.

The *relative* are those which have an antecedent expressed; and *absolute,* those that have none expressed. The pronouns are:

Qui, who, which, whom, that; *Lequel,* which, who, whom, that.
Que, which, whom, what, that; *laquelle,* f. s. " "
Quoi, which, what; *lesquels,* m. pl. " "
Dont, of which, of whom; *lesquelles,* f. pl., which, who,
Où, to which; [whom that.

QUI.

61. *Qui* with antecedent is a nominative relating to persons or to things, both genders and numbers:

L'enfant qui *pleure,* The child who cries.
La plume qui *est bonne,* The pen which is good.

62. *Qui* interrogative or governed by prepositions relates to persons only:

De qui *parlez-vous?* Of whom do you speak?

QUE.

63. *Que* is never governed by prepositions.

64. *Que* with antecedent is an accusative and relates to persons or to things, both genders and numbers :

Les fruits que j'aime, The fruits which I like.
Les dames que *je vois,* The ladies whom I see.

Que, interrogative, relates to things only :

Que *voulez-vous ?* What do you want ?

LEQUEL.

65. *Lequel,* which ; *le,* the ; and *quel,* which ; change : the first like the article, and *quel,* like an adjective : relates to persons or to things ; is interrogative or is not ; has an antecedent or has not one expressed ; but must always represent something or somebody spoken of before or immediately after :

De ces deux livres, lequel *voulez-vous ?*
Of these two books, which will you have ?
De ces trois demoiselles, laquelle *préférez-vous ?*
Of these three young ladies, which do you prefer ?

QUOI.

66. *Quoi,* relates to things only, is both genders and numbers ; is generally preceded by prepositions or sometimes followed by *de ;*

A quoi *pensez-vous ?* What are you thinking of.
Quoi *de plus beau que la nature ?*
What more beautiful than nature ?

DONT.

67. *Dont,* both genders and numbers, relates to persons or things :

L'homme dont *vous parlez,* The man of whom you speak.
La chose dont *il parle,* Ths thing of which he speaks.

N. B.—Never begin a *sentence* with *dont* to ask a question.

OU.

68. *Où,* to which ; relates to things only :

La ville où (for *à laquelle*) *je vais,* The city to which I go.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

69. They cannot be followed by any noun like the adjectives of the same name. The *Indefinite pronouns* are :

On, one, anyone, I, thou, she, we, you, they ;
Quiconque, whoever, *sing.*, both *genders* ;
Quelqu'un, m., somebody, some one ;
Chacun, m., each one, every one ;
Autrui, m. s., others, other people ;
L'un l'autre, m., each other, one another ;
L'un et l'autre, the one and the other, both ;
Personne, m., no one, nobody.

ON, ETC.

70. REM.—ON governs the verb in the *third singular* only, and may or may not relate to any person in particular.

On dit qu'il est arrivé, People say that he has arrived.

71. QUICONQUE generally governs two verbs.

Quiconque est né envieux et méchant est naturellement triste.
Whoever is born envious and bad is naturally sad.

72. QUELQU'UN has for feminine *quelqu'une* ; QUELQUES-UNS, m. pl., *quelques-unes*, pl. f. QUELQU'UN, absolute, relates to persons only ; but otherwise relates to both persons and things.

Quelqu'un est venu, Somebody came.
Donnez-moi quelques-unes de ces poires,
Give me some of these pears.

73. CHACUN has for feminine *chacune*, relates to persons or to things ; CHACUN, absolute, to persons only.

Chacun pense à soi, Every one thinks of himself.

74. AUTRUI, to persons only, always masculine singular, generally preceded by prepositions.

Faites à autrui, ce que vous voudriez qu'on vous fît,
Do unto others that which you would wish that they did to you.

L'UN L'AUTRE, generally to persons only; they express reciprocity.

Ils s'aiment l'un l'autre, They love each other.

Its plural is: *les uns les autres*—more than two.

L'UN ET L'AUTRE, to both persons and things.

L'un et l'autre sont sortis, Both are out.

Les uns et les autres—more than two.

75. PERSONNE, m. s., requires the verb which it governs or by which it is governed to be in the third singular, and accompanied by the negation *ne*.

Personne n'a raison, Nobody is right.

Je n'ai vu personne, I saw nobody.

VERBES.—VERBS.

76. There are in French four different conjugations known by the ending of the Infinitive. The Infinitive of the 1st, ends with *er*; of the 2nd, with *ir*; of the 3rd *oir*; of the 4th with *re*.

There are but two auxiliaries in French.

77. AVOIR, to have.
Ayant, having
eu, had.

ETRE, to be.
Etant, being.
Été, been.

PRESENT INDICATIVES.

(*Simple tenses.*)

J'	*ai,*	I have.	*Je*	*suis,*	I am.
Tu	*as,*	Thou hast.	*Tu*	*es,*	Thou art.
Il	*a,*	He has.	*Il*	*est,*	He is.
Nous	*avons,*	We have.	*Nous*	*sommes,*	We are.
Vous	*avez,*	You have.	*Vous*	*êtes,*	You are.
Ils	*ont,*	They have.	*Ils*	*sont,*	They are.

IMPERFECTS OF THE INDICATIVE.

J'	*av-ais,*	I had.	*J'*	*ét-ais,*	I was.
Tu	*av-ais,*	Thou hadst.	*Tu*	*ét-ais,*	Thou wast.
Il	*av-ait,*	He had.	*Il*	*ét-ais,*	He was.
Nous	*av-ions,*	We had.	*Nous*	*ét-ions,*	We were.
Vous	*av-iez,*	You had.	*Vous*	*ét-iez,*	You were.
Ils	*av-aient,*	They had.	*Ils*	*ét-aient,*	They were.

Elle av-ait,	She had.	*On ét-ait,*	People were.
On av-ait.	One had.	*Elle ét-ait.*	She was.

PRETERITES DEFINITE OR PERFECTS.

J' eus,	I had.	*Je fus,*	I was.
Tu eus,	Thou hadst.	*Tu fus,*	Thou wast.
Il eut,	He had.	*Il fut,*	He was.
Nous eûmes, 1	We had.	*Nous fûmes,* 2	We were.
Vous eûtes, 1	You had.	*Vous fûtes,* 2	You were.
Ils eurent.	They had.	*Ils furent,*	They were.

(*) FUTURES ABSOLUTE.

J' au rai,	I shall or will have.	*Je se rai,*	I shall or will be.
Tu au ras,	Thou shalt have.	*Tu se ras,*	Thou shalt be.
Il au ra,	He shall have.	*Il se ra,*	He shall be.
Nous au rons,	We shall have.	*Nous se ront,*	We shall be.
Vous au rez,	You shall have.	*Vous se rez,*	You shall be.
Ils au ront,	They shall have.	*Ils se ront,*	They shall be.

(*) CONDITIONALS PRESENT

J' au rais,	I should or would have.	*Je se rais,*	I would or should be.
Tu au rais,	Thou shouldst have.	*Tu se rais,*	Thou wouldst be.
Il au rait,	He should have.	*Il se rait,*	He would be.
Nous au rions,	We should have.	*Nous se rions,*	We would be.
Vous au riez,	You should have.	*Vous se riez,*	You would be.
Ils au raient,	They should have.	*Ils se raient,*	They would be.

(*) The signs *shall* or *will* are represented by the terminations of the Future, and *have* and *be* by the roots *au, se*; *should* or *would*, by the terminations of Conditional, and *have* and *be* by the roots *au, se*.

IMPERATIVES.

Aie,	Have thou.	*Sois,*	Be thou.
Qu'il ait,	Let him have.	*Qu'il soit,*	Let him be.
Ayons,	Let us have.	*Soyons,*	Let us be.
Ayez,	Let ye have.	*Soyez,*	Let ye be.
Qu'ils aient,	Let them have.	*Qu'ils soient,*	Let them be.

78. *Subjunctive present* always governed by a conjunction or by another verb connected with *que*, a conjunction.

SUBJUNCTIVES PRESENT.

Que j' ai e,	That I may have.	*Que je soi e,*	That I may be.
Que tu ai es,		*Que tu soi s,*	
Qu' il ai t,		*Qu' il soi t,*	
Que nous ay ons,		*Que nous soy ons,*	
Que vous ay ez,		*Que vous soy ez,*	
Qu' ils ai ent,		*Qu' ils soi ent,*	

IMPERFECTS OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

Que j'	*euss e,*	That I might have.	*Que je*	*fuss e,*	That I might be.
Que tu	*euss es,*		*Que tu*	*fuss es,*	
Qu' il	*eû t,*		*Qu' il*	*fû t,* *	
Que nous	*euss ions,*		*Que nous*	*fuss ions,*	
Que vous	*euss iez,*		*Que vous*	*fuss iez,*	
Qu' ils	*euss ent,*		*Qu' ils*	*fuss ent,*	

(1, 2,) REMARK.—The 1st and 2nd persons plural of the Preterite Definite have always a circumflex accent over the vowel preceding the *m* and *t*; and also, the 3rd person singular of the Imperfect of the Subjunctive. This rule holds good for all verbs without any exception.

REM. The terminations (*e, es, ent,*) must never be heard in any verb; they are called mute syllables.

COMPOUND TENSES.

The compound tenses of *Avoir* and *Etre* are formed with the help of all the simple tenses of *Avoir* to which are added the Past Participles *eu*, had; *été*, been:

79. The CONDITIONAL has two compound tenses:

J'aurais eu, I should have had, and

J'	*eusse*	*eu* or	*été,*	I should have had or been.
Tu	*eusses*	*eu*	*été,*	Thou shouldst have had or been.
Il	*eût*	*eu*	*été,*	He should have had or been.
Nous	*eussions*	*eu*	*été,*	We should have had or been.
Vous	*eussiez*	*eu*	*été,*	You should have had or been.
Ils	*eussent*	*eu*	*été,*	They should have had or been.

That second Conditional Past is called the also of the Conditional.

REMARK.—*Eu* may change in its final ending; but *été*, never.

80. AVOIR conjugated with two Personal Pronouns, to which the Past Participle of any active verb can be added:

Je	*le*	*lui*	*ai*	*lu,*	read.	I have read it to him.
Tu	*me*	*l'*	*as*	*lu,*		Thou hast read it to me.
Il	*te*	*l'*	*a*	*lu,*		He has read it to thee.
Nous	*le*	*lui*	*avons*	*lu,*		We have read it to him.
Vous	*les*	*leur*	*avez*	*lus,*		You have read them to them.
Ils	*te*	*les*	*ont*	*lus,*		They have read them to thee.

AVOIR, with *le, la, les.*

Que je	*l'*	*aie*	*vu*, seen.	That I may have seen it.
Que tu	*les*	*aies*	*vus*,	That thou mayest have seen them.
Qu' il	*les*	*ait*	*vus*,	That he may have seen them.
Que nous	*l'*	*ayons*	*vu*,	That we may have seen it, him or her.
Que vous	*les*	*ayez*	*vus*,	That you may have seen them.
Qu' ils	*l'*	*aient*	*vu*,	That they may have seen him, it, her.

IMPERATIVE AFFIRMATIVE.

Aie-le,	Have it.	See p. 111, No. 55.
Qu'il les ait,	Let him have them.	
Ayons-le,	Let us have it.	
Ayez-les,	Let ye have them.	
Qu'ils les aient,	Let them have them.	

IMPERATIVE NEGATIVE.

Ne l'aie pas,	Have it not.	See p. 111, No. 55.
Qu'il ne les ait pas,	Let him not have them.	
Ne l'ayons pas,	Let us not have it.	
Ne les ayez pas,	Do you not have them.	
Qu'ils ne les aient pas,	Let them not have them	

81. Verbs AVOIR and ETRE, negative and interrogative:

Ai-je?	Have I?	*Suis-je,*	Am I?
As-tu?	Hast thou?	*Es-tu,?*	Art thou?
**A-t-il?*	Has he?	*Est-il?*	Is he?
Avons-nous?	Have we?	*Sommes-nous?*	Are we?
Avez-vous?	Have you?	*Etes-vous?*	Are you?
Ont-ils?	Have they.	*Sont-ils?*	Are they?

Avais-je?	Had I?	*Etais-je?*	Was I?
Avais-tu?	Hadst thou?	*Etais-tu?*	Wast thou?
Avait-il?	Had?	*Etait-il?*	Was he?
Avions-nous?	Had we?	*Etions-nous?*	Were we?
Aviez-vous?	Had you?	*Etiez-vous?*	Were you?
Avaient-ils?	Had they?	*Etaient-ils?*	Were they?

Eus-je?	Had I?	*Fus-je?*	Was I?
Eus-tu?	Hadst thou?	*Fus-tu?*	Wast thou?
Eut-il?	Had he?	*Fut-il?*	Was he?
Eûmes-nous?	Had we?	*Fûmes-nous?*	Were we?
Eûtes-vous?	Had you?	*Fûtes-vous?*	Were you?
Eurent-ils?	Had they?	*Furent-ils?*	Were they?

Aurai-je ?	Shall I have ?	*Serai-je ?*	Shall I be ?
Auras-tu ?	Shalt thou have ?	*Seras-tu ?*	Shalt thou be ?
**Aura-t-il ?*	Shall he have ?	**Sera-t-il ?*	Shall he be ?
Aurons-nous ?	Shall we have ?	*Serons-nous ?*	Shall we be ?
Aurez-vous ?	Shall you have ?	*Serez-vous ?*	Shall you be ?
Auront-ils ?	Shall they have ?	*Seront-ils ?*	Shall they be ?

Aurais-je	Should I have ?	*Serais-je ?*	Should I be ?
Aurais-tu ?	Shouldst thou have ?	*Serais-tu ?*	Shouldst thou be ?
Aurait-il ?	Should he have ?	*Serait-il ?*	Should he be ?
Aurions-nous ?	Should we have ?	*Serions-nous ?*	Should we be ?
Auriez-vous ?	Should you have ?	*Seriez-vous ?*	Should you be ?
Auraient-ils ?	Should they have ?	*Seraient-ils ?*	Should they be ?

N. B.—Although the (*e*) of *je* is heard when standing before a verb, it becomes almost silent when after, to form the interrogation.

(*) Rem.—When the verb ends with a vowel in the third person singular and the verb is interrogative, the pronouns *il*, *elle* or *on* coming after, for the sake of euphony, take a (*t*) between two hyphens, placed between the verb and the pronoun.

82. The NEGATIONS used with verbs are:

ne,	*pas,*	not	*ne,*	*personne,*	nobody.
ne,	*point,*	not at all.	*ne,*	*aucun,*	not one.
ne,	*jamais,*	never.	*ne,*	*nul,*	not any.
ne,	*rien,*	nothing.	*ne,*	*plus,*	no more.

THEIR PLACE.

83. The verb comes just between *ne* and the second negation; if the pronoun comes before the verb, the *ne* goes just after that pronoun; if a verb is in a compound tense, the Past Participle goes after the second negation.

Je	*n'*	*ai*	*pas,*	I have not.
Tu	*n'*	*as*	*pas,*	Thou hast not.
Il	*n'*	*a*	*rien,*	He has nothing.
Nous	*n'*	*avons*	*jamais,*	We have never.
Vous	*n'*	*avez*	*personne,*	You have nobody.
Ils	*n'*	*ont*	*point,*	They have not at all.

Je	*ne*	*suis*	*pas,*	I am not.
Tu	*n'*	*es*	*pas,*	Thou art not.
Il	*n'*	*est*	*jamais,*	He is never.
Nous	*ne*	*sommes*	*pas,*	We are not.
Vous	*n'*	*êtes*	*rien,*	You are nothing.
Ils	*ne*	*sont*	*rien,*	They are nothing.

Ne	*l'*	*avais-*	*je*	*pas*	*appris ?*	Had I not learnt it ?
Ne	*les*	*avais-*	*tu*	*pas*	*?*	Hadst thou not learnt them ?
Ne	*les*	*avait-*	*il*	*pas*	*?*	Had he not learnt them ?
Ne	*l'*	*avions-*	*nous*	*pas*	*?*	Had we not learnt it ?
Ne	*l'*	*aviez-*	*vous*	*pas*	*?*	Had you not learnt it ?
Ne	*les*	*avaient-*	*ils*	*pas*	*?*	Had they not learnt them ?

---

84. General terminations of each person in Verbs, whether regular or irregular :

The first singular may end with *e, s, x, ai.*
The second " " " *s, x.*
The third " " " *e, a, t, c, d.*
The first plural " " *ons, mes.*
The second " " " *ez, tes.*
The third " " " *ent, ont.*

85. General terminations of verbs :

An Infinitive may end with *er, ir, oir, re.*

A Present Part. " *ant, yant, ssant, evant.*

A Past Participle, " *é, i, u, is, it, ui, oint, aint, eint, ert, ort, ous,* m. *oute,* f. : in the masculine, and adding (*e*) mute for the feminine.

---

86. General Table of the regular terminations of the **FOUR CONJUGATIONS:**

PRESENT INFINITIVE.

er,	*ir,*	*ev oir,*	*re.*

PAST PARTICIPLE.

ant,	*iss ant,*	*ev ant,*	*ant.*

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

é,	*i,*	*u,*	*u.*

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

	1st.	2nd.	3rd.	4th.
1.	*e,*	*i s,*	*oi s,*	*s.*
2.	*es,*	*i s,*	*oi s,*	*s.*
3.	*e,*	*i t,*	*oi t,*	(*d.*) (*t.*)
1.	*ons,*	*iss ons,*	*ev ons,*	*ons.*
2.	*ez,*	*iss ez,*	*ev ez,*	*ez.*
3.	*ent,*	*iss ent,*	*oiv ent,*	*ent.*

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

1. *ais,*	*iss ais,*	*ev ais,*	*ais.*
2. *ais,*	*iss ais,*	*ev ais,*	*ais.*
3. *ait,*	*iss ait,*	*ev ait,*	*ait.*
1. *ions,*	*iss ions,*	*ev ions,*	*ions.*
2. *iez,*	*iss iez,*	*ev iez,*	*iez.*
3. *aient,*	*iss aient,*	*ev aient,*	*aient.*

PRETERITE DEFINITE.

1. *ai,*	*i s,*	*u s,*	*i s.*
2. *as,*	*i s,*	*u s,*	*i s.*
3. *a,*	*i t,*	*u t,*	*i t.*
1. *âmes,*	*î mes,*	*û mes,*	*î mes.*
2. *âtes,*	*î tes,*	*û tes,*	*î tes.*
3. *èrent,*	*i rent,*	*u rent.*	*i rent.*

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

1. *e rai,*	*i rai,*	*ev rai,*	*rai.*
2. *e ras,*	*i ras,*	*ev ras,*	*ras.*
3. *e ra,*	*i ra,*	*ev ra,*	*ra.*
1. *e rons,*	*i rons,*	*ev rons,*	*rons.*
2. *e rez,*	*i rez,*	*ev rez,*	*rez.*
3. *e ront.*	*i ront,*	*ev ront,*	*ront.*

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

1. *e rais,*	*i rais,*	*ev rais,*	*rais.*
2. *e rais,*	*i rais,*	*ev rais,*	*rais.*
3. *e rait,*	*i rait,*	*ev rait,*	*rait.*
1. *e rions,*	*i rions,*	*ev rions,*	*rions.*
2. *e riez,*	*i riez,*	*ev riez,*	*riez,*
3. *e raient,*	*i raient,*	*ev raient,*	*raient.*

IMPERATIVE.

2. *e,*	*i s,*	*oi s,*	*s.*
1. *ons,*	*iss ons,*	*ev ons,*	*ons.*
2. *ez,*	*iss ez,*	*ev ez,*	*ez.*

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

1. *e,*	*iss e,*	*oiv e,*	*e.*
2. *es,*	*iss es,*	*oiv es,*	*es.*
3. *e,*	*iss e,*	*oiv e,*	*e.*
1. *ions,*	*iss ions,*	*ev ions,*	*ions.*
2. *iez,*	*iss iez,*	*ev iez,*	*iez.*
3. *ent,*	*iss ent,*	*oiv ent,*	*ent.*

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

1. *ass e,*	*iss e,*	*uss e,*	*iss e.*
2. *ass es,*	*iss es,*	*uss es,*	*iss es.*
3. *â t,*	*î t,*	*û t,*	*î t.*
1. *ass ions,*	*iss ions,*	*uss ions,*	*iss ions.*
2. *ass iez,*	*iss iez,*	*uss iez,*	*iss iez.*
3. *ass ent,*	*iss ent,*	*uss ent,*	*iss ent.*

☞ The learner will easily perceive that, if he knows one column of each of the different divisions of tenses, he will know the others, as they are exactly the same, with the exception of a few letters, to show they belong to the 1st, 2nd, 3rd or 4th conjugation; such as *e, i, oi;* for the Present indicatif; *iss, ev;* for the Imperfect; *i, u, i;* for the Preterite; *e, i, ev;* for the future and Conditional; *iss, oiv;* for the Subjunctive Present; *ass, iss, uss, iss;* for the Imperfect Subjunctive.

VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

87. Verbs of the first conjugation end in the Infinitive Present with *er;* in the Present Participle with *ant;* and in the Past Participle with *é.*

INFINITIVE PRESENT,	*er,*	*chanter,*	to sing.
PRESENT PARTICIPLE,	*ant,*	*chantant,*	singing.
PAST PARTICIPLE,	*é,*	*chanté,*	sung.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

e	*Je*	*chant*	*e,*	I sing, I am singing or do sing.
es	*Tu*	*chant*	*es,*	Thou singest, thou art singing, or dost sing.
e	*Il*	*chant*	*e,*	He sings, he is singing or does sing.
e	*On*	*chant*	*e,*	One sings, one is singing or does sing.
ons	*Nous*	*chant*	*ons,*	We sing, we are singing or do sing.
ez	*Vous*	*chant*	*ez,*	You sing, you are singing or do sing.
ent	*Ils*	*chant*	*ent,*	They sing, they are singing or do sing.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.—(*Compound tense.*)

J'ai chanté, I have sung or I have been singing.

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

ais	*Je*	*chant*	*ais,*	I was singing or did sing.
ais	*Tu*	*chant*	*ais,*	Thou wast singing or didst sing.
ait	*Il*	*chant*	*ait,*	He was singing or did sing.
ait	*On*	*chant*	*ait,*	One was singing or did sing.
ions	*Nous*	*chant*	*ions,*	We were singing or did sing.
iez	*Vous*	*chant*	*iez,*	You were singing or did sing.
aient	*Ils*	*chant*	*aient,*	They were singing or did sing.

PLUPERFECT INDICATIVE.—(*Compound tense*).

J'avais chanté, I had sung.

PERFECT OR PRETERITE DEFINITIVE.

ai	*Je*	*chant*	*ai,*	I sang or did sing,
as	*Tu*	*chant*	*as,*	Thou sangest or didst sing.
a	*Il*	*chant*	*a,*	He sang or did sing.
âmes	*Nous*	*chant*	*âmes,*	We sang or did sing.
âtes	*Vous*	*chant*	*âtes,*	You sang or did sing.
èrent	*Ils*	*chant*	*èrent,*	They sang or did sing.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.—(*Compound tense*).

J'eus chanté, I had sung.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

erai	*Je*	*chant*	*erai,*	I will or shall sing.
eras	*Tu*	*chant*	*eras,*	Thou wilt or shalt sing.
era	*Il*	*chant*	*era,*	He will or shall sing.
erons	*Nous*	*chant*	*erons,*	We will or shall sing.
erez	*Vous*	*chant*	*erez.*	You will or shall sing.
eront	*Ils*	*chant*	*eront,*	They will or shall sing.

FUTURE ANTERIOR.—(*Compound tense*).

J'aurai chanté, I shall have sung.

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

erais	*Je*	*chant*	*erais,*	I would or should sing.
erais	*Tu*	*chant*	*erais,*	Thou wouldst or shouldst sing.
erait	*Il*	*chant*	*erait,*	He would or should sing.
erions	*Nous*	*chant*	*erions,*	We would or should sing.
eriez	*Vous*	*chant*	*eriez,*	You would or should sing.
eraient	*Ils*	*chant*	*eraient,*	They would or should sing.

CONDITIONAL PAST.—(*Compound tense*).

J'aurais chanté I should have sung; or
J'eusse chanté I should have sung.—See page 118, No. 79.

IMPERATIVE.

2. *e*		*Chant*	*e,*	Sing thou.
3. *e*	*Qu'il*	*chant*	*e,*	Let him sing. (*Like the 3d sin. of the sub.*)
1. *ons*		*Chant*	*ons,*	Let us sing.
2. *ez*		*Chant*	*ez,*	Do ye sing.
3. *ent*	*Qu'ils*	*Chant*	*ent,*	Let them sing. (*Like the 3d pl. of the sub.*)

REM.—The 2nd person singular of the verbs of the 1st conjugation, in the imperative, drops the (*s*), unless followed by (*en, y*), pronouns, or *y*, adverb.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

e	*Que je*	*chant*	*e,*	That I may sing.
es	*Que tu*	*chant*	*es,*	That thou mayest sing.
e	*Qu' il*	*chant*	*e,*	That he may sing.
ions	*Que nous*	*chant*	*ions,*	That we may sing.
iez	*Que vous*	*chant*	*iez,*	That you may sing.
ent	*Qu' ils*	*chant*	*ent,*	That they may sing.

PERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

Que j'aie chanté, That I may have sung.

asse	*Que je*	*chant*	*asse,*	That I might sing.
asses	*Que tu*	*chant*	*asses,*	That thou mightest sing.
ât	*Qu' il*	*chant*	*ât,*	That he might sing.
assions	*Que nous*	*chant*	*assions,*	That we might sing.
assiez	*Que vous*	*chant*	*assiez,*	That you might sing.
assent	*Qu' ils*	*chant*	*assent,*	That they might sing.

PLUPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

Que j'eusse chanté, That I might have sung.

—

Most French verbs belong to the first conjugation, and have the same terminations as *chanter.*

88. REMARKS.—1st. Verbs ending with *cer* in the Infinitive, in order to preserve the soft sound of the *c*, must take a cedilla under it, when before *a, o ;*

avancer,	to advance.	*bercer,*	to rock.
annoncer,	to announce.	*pincer,*	to pinch.
sucer,	to suck.	*percer,*	pierce.

2nd. Verbs ending with *ger*, to preserve the soft sound of *g*, take *e* mute before *a, o ;*

manger,	to eat.	*déranger,*	to disturb.
bouger,	to stir.	*négliger,*	to neglect.
songer,	to think.	*juger,*	to judge.

3rd. Verbs ending with *yer*, generally change the (*y*) into (*i*), when the *y* precedes (*e, es, ent*), and *erai, erais.*

essuyer,	to wipe.	*appuyer,*	to prop, to rest upon
balayer,	to sweep.	*ennuyer,*	to tire, weary.
effrayer,	to frighten.	*rayer,*	to strike out.
employer,	to employ.	*payer,*	to pay.
ployer,	to bend.	*nettoyer,*	to clean.

4th. Those in *eler* double their (*l*) :

amonceler,	to heap up.	*dételer,*	to unyoke.
chanceler,	to stagger.	*épeler,*	to spell.
atteler,	to put horses to.	*renouveler,*	to renew.
rappeler,	to recall, remember.		

Except : *bourreler,* to goad, to torment ; *déceler,* to reveal, to betray ; *geler,* to freeze ; *harceler,* to harass ; *peler,* to peel ; *dégeler,* to thaw ; which take a (`) on the *e* before the (*l*).

(See page 60, Part I.)

5th. Of all those ending in *eter : jeter,* to throw ; *caqueter,* to chatter, cackle ; double their (*t*). All the others take a grave accent on the *e* before *t*, preceding (*e, es, ent*).

cacheter,	to seal.	*décacheter,*	to unseal.
jeter,	to throw.	*caqueter,*	to chatter.
rejeter,	to reject.	*projeter,*	to project.

6th. Those ending with *éger, éder, ever, ener, eser,* as : *abréger,* to abridge ; *céder,* to yield ; *achever,* to finish ; *mener,* to take, to conduct ; *peser,* to weigh ; change the (´) accent ; or if they have none, take a grave (`) on the (*e*) before *g, d, v, n, s,* before the unaccented terminations *e, es, ent, erai, erais.*

régler,	to regulate, rule.	*crever,*	to burst.
abréger,	to abridge.	*amener,*	to bring (along).
célébrer,	to celebrate.	*peser,*	to weigh.
compléter,	to complete.	*élever,*	to bring up, to raise.

89. The six remarks exemplified.

PRESENT INFINITIVE.

To rock,	to eat,	to pay,	to spell,	to throw,	to rule,	to take.
Bercer,	*manger,*	*payer,*	*épeler,*	*jeter,*	*régler,*	*mener.*

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Berçant,	*mang(e)ant,*	*payant,*	*épelant,*	*jetant,*	*réglant,*	*menant.*

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Bercé,	*mangé,*	*payé,*	*épelé,*	*jeté,*	*réglé,*	*mené.*

PPEESENT INDICATIVE.

	1	2	3	4	5	6	
Je	*berce,*	*mange,*	*paie,*	*épelle,*	*jette,*	*règle,*	*mène.*
Tu	*berces,*	*manges,*	*paies,*	*épelles,*	*jettes,*	*règles,*	*mène.*
Il	*berce,*	*mange,*	*paie,*	*épelle,*	*jette,*	*règle,*	*mène.*
Nous	*berçons,*	*mang(e)ons,*	*payons,*	*épelons,*	*jetons,*	*réglons,*	*menons.*
Vous	*bercez,*	*mangez,*	*payez,*	*épelez,*	*jetez,*	*réglez,*	*menenez.*
Ils,	*bercent,*	*mangent,*	*payent,*	*épellent,*	*jettent,*	*règlent,*	*mènent.*

IMPERFECT TENSE.

	1	3	4	5	6	
Je	*berçais,*	*mang(e)ais,*	*épelais,*	*jetais,*	*réglais,*	*menais.*
Tu	*berçais,*	*mang(e)ais,*	*épelais,*	*jetais,*	*réglais,*	*menais.*
Il	*berçait,*	*mang(e)ait,*	*épelait,*	*jetait,*	*réglait,*	*menait.*
Nous	*bercions,*	*mangions,*	*épelions,*	*jetions,*	*réglioons,*	*menions.*
Vous	*berciez,*	*mangiez,*	*épeliez,*	*jetiez,*	*régliez,*	*meniez.*
Ils	*berçaient,*	*mang(e)aient,*	*épelaient,*	*jetaieut,*	*réglaient,*	*menaient.*

---

90. Regular verb of the SECOND CONJUGATION.

PRESENT INFINITIVE,	*ir,*	*choisir,*	to choose.
PRESENT PARTICIPLE,	*issant,*	*choisissant,*	choosing.
PAST PARTICIPLE,	*i,*	*choisi,*	chosen.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

is	*Je*	*chois*	*is,*	I choose, am choosing, do choose.
is	*Tu*	*chois*	*is,*	Thou choosest, art choosing, dost choose,
it	*Il*	*chois*	*it,*	He chooses, is choosing, does choose.
issons	*Nous*	*chois*	*issons,*	We choose, are choosing, do choose.
issez	*Vous*	*chois*	*issez,*	You choose, are choosing, do choose.
issent	*Ils*	*chois*	*irent,*	They choose, are choosing, do choose

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

issais	*Je*	*chois*	*issais,*	I was choosing, did choose.
issais	*Tu*	*chois*	*issais,*	Thou wast choosing, didst choose.
issait	*Il*	*chois*	*issait,*	He was choosing, did choose.
issions	*Nous*	*chois*	*issions,*	We were choosing, did choose.
issiez	*Vous*	*chois*	*issiez,*	You were choosing, did choose.
issaient	*Ils*	*chois*	*issaient,*	They were choosing, did choose.

PERFECT INDICATIVE.

is	*Je*	*chois*	*is,*	I choose, did chose.
is	*Tu*	*chois*	*is,*	Thou chosest, didst choose.
it	*Il*	*chois*	*it,*	He chose, did choose.
îmes	*Nous*	*chois*	*îmes,*	We chose, did choose.
îtes,	*Vous*	*chois*	*îtes,*	You chose did choose.
irent	*Ils*	*chois*	*irent,*	They chose, did choose.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

irai	*Je*	*chois*	*irai,*	I shall or will choose.
iras	*Tu*	*chois*	*iras,*	Thou shalt or wilt choose.
ira	*Il*	*chois*	*ira,*	He shall or will choose.
irons	*Nous*	*chois*	*irons,*	We shall or will choose.
irez	*Vous*	*chois*	*irez,*	You shall or will choose.
iront	*Ils*	*chois*	*iront.*	They shall or will choose.

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

irais	*Je*	*chois*	*irais.*	I would or should choose.
irais	*Tu*	*chois*	*irais,*	Thou wouldst or shouldst choose.
irait	*Il*	*chois*	*irait,*	He would or should choose.
irions	*Nous*	*chois*	*irions,*	We would or should choose.
iriez	*Vous*	*chois*	*iriez,*	You would or should choose.
iraient	*Ils*	*chois*	*iraient,*	They would or should choose.

IMPERATIVE.

2. *is*		*Chois*	*is*	Choose (thou).
3. *isse*	*Qu'il*	*chois*	*isse,*	Let him choose. (*Like the subj.*)
1. *issons*		*Chois*	*issons,*	Let us choose.
2. *issez*		*Chois*	*issez,*	Let ye choose.
3. *issent*	*Qu'ils*	*chois*	*issent,*	Let them choose. (*Like the subj.*).

PRESENT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

isse	*Que je*	*chois*	*isse,*	That I may choose.
isses	*Que tu*	*chois*	*isses,*	That thou mayest choose.
isse	*Qu' il*	*chois*	*isse,*	That he may choose.
issions	*Que nous*	*chois*	*issions,*	That we may choose.
issiez	*Que vous*	*chois*	*issiez,*	That you may choose.
issent	*Qu' ils*	*chois*	*issent,*	That they may choose.

IMPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

isse	*Que je*	*chois*	*isse,*	That I might choose.
isses	*Que tu*	*chois*	*isses,*	That thou mightest choose.
ît	*Qu' il*	*chois*	*ît,*	That he might choose.
issions	*Que nous*	*chois*	*issions,*	That we might choose.
issiez	*Que vous*	*chois*	*issiez,*	That you might choose.
issent	*Qu' ils*	*chois*	*issent,*	That they might choose.

The compound tenses are formed by adding *choisi*, to the simple tenses of AVOIR, to have :

Conjugated like the model.

adoucir,	to soften.	*embellir,*	to embellish.
affermir,	to strengthen.	*finir,*	to finish.
agir,	to act.	*obéir,*	to obey.
bâtir,	to build.	*punir,*	to punish.
démolir,	to demolish.	*régir,*	to govern.

---

91. Regular form of a verb of the **THIRD CONJUGATION.**

PRESENT INFINITIVE,	*evoir,*	*recevoir,*	to receive.
PRESENT PARTICIPLE,	*evant,*	*recevant,*	receiving.
PAST PARTICIPLE,	*u,*	*reçu,*	received.

The (*c*) of those in *cevoir* take a cedilla before *o*, *u*.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

ois	*Je*	*reç*	*ois,*	I receive, am receiving, do receive.
ois	*Tu,*	*reç*	*ois,*	Thou receivest, art receiving, dost receive.
oit	*Il*	*reç*	*oit,*	He receives, is receiving, does receive.
evons	*Nous*	*rec*	*evons,*	We receive, are receiving, do receive.
evez	*Vous*	*rec*	*evez*	You receive, are receiving, do receive.
oivent	*Ils*	*reç*	*oivent,*	They receive, are receiving, do receive.

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

evais	*Je*	*rec*	*evais,*	I was receiving, did receive.
evais	*Tu*	*rec*	*evais,*	Thou wast receiving, didst receive.
evait	*Il*	*rec*	*evait,*	He was receiving, did receive.
evions	*Nous*	*rec*	*evions,*	We were receiving, did receive.
eviez	*Vous*	*rec*	*eviez,*	You were receiving, did receive.
evaient	*Ils*	*rec*	*evaient,*	They were receiving, did receive.

PERFECT INDICATIVE.

us	*Je*	*reç*	*us,*	I received, did receive.
us	*Tu*	*reç*	*us,*	Thou receivedst, didst receive.
ut	*Il*	*reç*	*ut,*	He received did receive.
ûmes	*Nous*	*reç*	*ûmes*	We received, did receive.
ûtes	*Vous*	*reç*	*ûtes,*	You received, did receive.
urent	*Ils*	*reç*	*urent,*	They received, did receive.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

evrai	*Je*	*rec*	*evrai,*	I shall or will receive.
evras	*Tu*	*rec*	*evras,*	Thou shalt or wilt receive.
evra	*Il*	*rec*	*evra,*	He shall or will receive.
evrons	*Nous*	*rec*	*evrons*	We shall or will receive.
evrez	*Vous*	*rec*	*evrez,*	You shall or will receive.
evront	*Ils*	*rec*	*evront,*	They shall or will receive.

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

evrais	*Je*	*rec*	*evrais,*	I should or would receive.
evrais	*Tu*	*rec*	*evrais,*	Thou shouldst or wouldst receive.
evrait	*Il*	*rec*	*evrait,*	He should or would receive.
evrions	*Nous*	*rec*	*evrions,*	We should or would receive.
evriez	*Vous*	*rec*	*evriez,*	You should or would receive.
evraient	*Ils*	*rec*	*evraient,*	They should or would receive.

IMPERATIVE.

2. *ois*		*Reç*	*ois,*	Receive (thou).
3. *oive*	*Qu'il*	*reç*	*oive,*	Let him receive. (*Like the subj.*)
1. *evons*		*Rec*	*evons,*	Let us receive.
2. *evez*		*Rec*	*evez,*	Let you receive.
3. *oivent*	*Qu'ils*	*reç*	*oivent,*	Let them receive. (*Like the subj.*)

PRESENT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

oive	*Que je*	*reç*	*oive,*	That I may receive.
oives	*Que tu*	*reç*	*oives,*	That thou mayest receive.
oive	*Qu' il*	*reç*	*oive,*	That he may receive.
evions	*Que nous*	*rec*	*evions,*	That we may receive.
eviez	*Que vous*	*rec*	*eviez.*	That you may receive.
oivent	*Qu' ils*	*reç*	*oivent,*	That they may receive.

IMPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

usse	*Que je*	*reç*	*usse,*	That I might receive.
usses	*Que tu*	*reç*	*usses,*	That thou mightest receive.
ût	*Qu' il*	*reç*	*ût,*	That he might receive.
ussions	*Que nous*	*reç*	*ussions,*	That we might receive.
ussiez	*Que vous*	*reç*	*ussiez.*	That you might receive.
ussent	*Qu' ils*	*reç*	*ussent,*	That they might receive.

There are very few regular verbs belonging to this conjugation:

apercevoir, to perceive. *concevoir*, to conceive, to understand.
décevoir, to deceive. *percevoir*, to perceive, to collect taxes.
devoir, to owe, to be to, *redevoir*, to owe again.

The others in *oir* are irregular.

---

92. Regular Verb of the **FOURTH CONJUGATION.**

PRESENT INFINITIVE,	*re*,	*vendre*,	to sell.
PRESENT PARTICIPLE,	*ant*,	*vendant*,	selling.
PAST PARTICIPLE,	*u*,	*vendu*,	sold.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

s	*Je*	*vend*	*s*,	I sell, am selling, do sell.
s	*Tu*	*vend*	*s*,	Thou sellest, art selling, dost sell.
	Il	*vend*		He sells, is selling, does sell.
ons	*Nous*	*vend*	*ons*,	We sell, are selling, do sell.
ez	*Vous*	*vend*	*ez*,	You sell, are selling, do sell.
ent	*Ils*	*vend*	*ent*,	They sell, are selling do sell.

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

ais	*Je*	*vend*	*ais*,	I was selling, did sell.
ais	*Tu*	*vend*	*ais*,	Thou wast selling, didst sell.
ait	*Il*	*vend*	*ait*,	He was selling, did sell.
ions	*Nous*	*vend*	*ions*,	We were selling, did sell.
iez	*Vous*	*vend*	*iez*,	You were selling, did sell.
aient	*Ils*	*vend*	*aient*,	They were selling, did sell.

PERFECT.

is	*Je*	*vend*	*is*,	I sold, did sell.
is	*Tu*	*vend*	*is*,	Thou soldest, didst sell.
it	*Il*	*vend*	*it*	He sold, did sell.
îmes,	*Nous*	*vend*	*îmes*	We sold, did sell.
îtes	*Vous*	*vend*	*îtes*,	You sold, did sell.
irent	*Ils*	*vend*	*irent*,	They sold, did sell.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

rai	*Je*	*vend*	*rai*,	I will sell.
ras	*Tu*	*vend*	*ras*,	Thou wilt sell.
ra	*Il*	*vend*	*ra*,	He will sell.
rons	*Nous*	*vend*	*rons*,	We will sell.
rez	*Vous*	*vend*	*rez*,	You will sell.
ront	*Ils*	*vend*	*ront*,	They will sell.

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

rais	*Je*	*vend*	*rais,*	I should or would sell.
rais	*Tu*	*vend*	*rais,*	Thou shouldst or wouldst sell.
rait	*Il*	*vend*	*rait,*	He would or should sell.
rions	*Nous*	*vend*	*rions,*	We would or should sell.
riez	*Vous*	*vend*	*riez,*	You would or should sell.
raient	*Ils*	*vend*	*raient,*	They should or would sell.

IMPERATIVE.

2. *s*		*Vend*	*s,*	Sell (thou).	
3. *e*	*Qu'il*	*vend*	*e,*	Let him sell.	(*Like the subj.*)
1. *ons*		*Vend*	*ons,*	Let us sell.	
2. *ez*		*Vend*	*ez,*	Let ye sell.	
3. *ent*	*Qu'ils*	*vend*	*ent,*	Let them sell.	(*Like the subj.*)

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

e	*Que je*	*vend*	*e,*	That I may sell.
es	*Que tu*	*vend*	*es,*	That thou mayest sell.
e	*Qu' il*	*vend*	*e,*	That he may sell.
ions	*Que nous*	*vend*	*ions,*	That we may sell.
iez	*Que vous*	*vend*	*iez,*	That you may sell.
ent	*Qu' ils*	*vend*	*ent,*	That they may sell.

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

isse	*Que je*	*vend*	*isse,*	That I might sell,
isses	*Que tu*	*vend*	*isses,*	That thou mightest sell.
it	*Qu' il*	*vend*	*ît,*	That he might sell.
issions	*Que nous*	*vend*	*issions,*	That we might sell.
issiez	*Que vous*	*vend*	*issiez,*	That you might sell.
issent	*Qu' ils*	*vend*	*issent*	That they might sell.

—

Conjugated like the model :

attendre,	to wait for.	*perdre,*	to lose.
défendre,	to defend.	*pendre,*	to hang.
descendre,	to come, go down.	*rendre,*	to restore.
entendre,	to hear, understand.	*répondre,*	to answer.

93.

REMARKS ON THE FIRST PERSON SINGULAR OF VERBS USED INTERROGATIVELY :

1st. Verbs of the first conjugation end with *e* mute ; but that *e* mute becomes accented if followed by the nominative of the verb, as : *Chanté-je ?* Do I sing ?

2nd. For the second, it would be rather hard to say *finis-je, choisis-je ;* so we make use of *est-ce que*, before the pronoun and verb, and we say , *Est-ce que je choisis ?* Do I choose ?

3rd. For the third we also say *reçois-je ;* but : *Est-ce que je reçois ?* Do I receive ? is far better.

4th. For the fourth, we cannot say *vends-je ?* there being so many consonants ; so we must say : *Est-ce que je vends ?* Do I sell ? but we can say *reçois-tu ? vends-tu ?* and so on, for all the other persons.

REMARK.—By using EST-CE QUE before any tense, except the Substantive and Imperative, and any person of the four verbs given, you can make them interrogative without displacing the pronouns at all.

PASSIVE VERBS.

94. Passive Verbs as in English are conjugated in French with the simple and compound tenses of ETRE, to be ; to which is added any Past Participle of an active verb you choose to make passive, as :

Je suis aimé de vous,	I am loved by you.
Elles ont été punies,	They have been punished.

Moreover, that Past Participle must agree in gender and in number with the nominative of the verb :

Nous avons dormi,	We have slept.
Nous sommes arrivés,	We have arrived.

NEUTER VERBS.

95. Neuter Verbs in French are chiefly conjugated with *Avoir*, but often with *Etre ;* if with *Avoir*, the Past Participle never changes ; if with *Etre*, the Past Participle agrees with the nominative of the verb.

The following are conjugated with *Etre* in their compound tenses :

aller,	to go.	*allé,*	gone.
arriver,	to arrive.	*arrivé,*	arrived.
décéder,	to die, to be deceased.	*décédé,*	dead.

devenir,	to become.	*devenu,*	become.
entrer,	to come in.	*entré,*	come in.
mourir,	to die, to lose life.	*mort,*	dead.
naître,	to be born.	*né,*	been born, born.
partir,	to set off, out.	*parti,*	set off.
rester,	to remain.	*resté,*	remained.
venir,	to come.	*venu,*	come.

REFLECTIVE VERBS.

96. Reflective or Pronominal Verbs are those which are conjugated with two Personal Pronouns, as :

Je me,	I myself.	*On se,*	One oneself.
Tu te,	Thou thyself.	*Nous nous,*	We ourselves.
Il se,	He himself.	*Vous vous,*	You yourself, or selves.
Elle se,	She herself.	*Ils se,*	They themselves.

97. The peculiarity of these verbs is, that their compound tenses instead of being conjugated with the auxiliary *Avoir*, are always conjugated with *Etre*. When verbs are not reflective the myself, &c., is expressed by :

Myself,	*Moi-même.*	Ourselves,	*Nous-mêmes.*
Thyself,	*Toi-même.*	Yourself or selves,	*Vous-mêmes.*
Himself,	*Lui-même.*	Themselves,	*Eux-mêmes.*
Herself,	*Elle-même.*		*Elles-mêmes.*

98. SE LEVER.

PRESENT INFINITIVE,	*se lever,*	to rise, to raise oneself.
PRESENT PARTICIPLE,	*se levant,*	rising.
PAST PARTICIPLE,	*levé,*	risen.
Compound of the Inf.	*s'être levé,*	to have risen.
" Pres. Part.	*s'étant levé,*	having risen.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

[I rise.

Je	*me*	*lève,*
Tu	*te*	*lèves.*
Il	*se*	*lève.*
Nous	*nous*	*levons.*
Vous	*vous*	*levez.*
Ils	*se*	*lèvent.*

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

[I have risen.

Je	*me*	*suis*	*levé.*
Tu	*t'*	*es*	*levé.*
Il	*s'*	*est*	*levé.*
Nous	*nous*	*sommes*	*levés.*
Vous	*vous*	*êtes*	*levés.*
Ils	*se*	*sont*	*levés.*

IMPERFECT.

[I was rising.

Je	*me*	*levais.*
Tu	*te*	*levais.*
Il	*se*	*levait.*
Nous	*nous*	*levions.*
Vous	*vous*	*leviez.*
Ils	*se*	*levaient.*

PLUPERFECT.

[I had risen.

Je	*m'*	*étais*	*levé.*
Tu	*t'*	*étais*	*levé.*
Il	*s'*	*était*	*levé.*
Nous	*nous*	*étions*	*levés.*
Vous	*vous*	*étiez*	*levés.*
Ils	*s'*	*étaient*	*levés.*

PERFECT.

[I rose, did rise.

Je	*me*	*levai.*
Tu	*te*	*levas.*
Il	*se*	*leva.*
Nous	*nous*	*levâmes.*
Vous	*vous*	*levâtes.*
Ils	*se*	*levèrent.*

PERFECT ANTERIOR.

[I had risen.

Je	*me*	*fus*	*levé.*
Tu	*te*	*fus*	*levé.*
Il	*se*	*fut*	*levé.*
Nous	*nous*	*fûmes*	*levés.*
Vous	*vous*	*fûtes*	*levés.*
Ils	*se*	*furent*	*levés.*

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

[I shall rise.

Je	*me*	*lèverai.*
Tu	*te*	*lèveras.*
Il	*se*	*lèvera.*
Nous	*nous*	*lèverons.*
Vous	*vous*	*lèverez.*
Ils	*se*	*lèveront.*

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

[I shall have risen.

Je	*me*	*serai*	*levé.*
Tu	*te*	*seras*	*levé.*
Il	*se*	*sera*	*levé.*
Nous	*nous*	*serons*	*levés.*
Vous	*vous*	*serez*	*levés.*
Ils	*se*	*seront*	*levés.*

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

[I should rise.

Je	*me*	*lèverais.*
Tu	*te*	*lèverais.*
Il	*se*	*lèverait.*
Nous	*nous*	*lèverions.*
Vous	*vous*	*lèveriez.*
Ils	*se*	*lèveraient.*

CONDITIONAL PAST.

[I should have risen.

Je	*me*	*serais*	*levé.*
Tu	*te*	*serais*	*levé.*
Il	*se*	*serait*	*levé.*
Nous	*nous*	*serions*	*levés.*
Vous	*vous*	*seriez*	*levés.*
Ils	*se*	*seraient*	*levés.*

IMPERATIVE.

Lève-toi,	Rise.
Qu'il se lève,	Let him rise.
Levons-nous,	Let us rise.
Levez-ous,	Rise ye.
Qu'ils se lèvent,	Let them rise.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

			[That I may rise.
Que je	*me*	*lève.*	
Que tu	*te*	*lèves.*	
Qu' il	*se*	*lève.*	
Que nous	*nous*	*levions.*	
Que vous	*vous*	*leviez.*	
Qu' ils	*se*	*lèvent.*	

PERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

			[That I may have risen.
Que je	*me*	*sois*	*levé.*
Que tu	*te*	*sois*	*levé.*
Qu' il	*se*	*soit*	*levé*
Que nous	*nous*	*soyons*	*levés.*
Que vous	*vous*	*soyez*	*levés.*
Qu' ils	*se*	*soient*	*levés.*

IMPERFECT.

			[That I might rise.
Que je	*me*	*levasse*	
Que tu	*te*	*levasses.*	
Qu' il	*se*	*levât.*	
Que nous	*nous*	*levassions.*	
Que vous	*vous*	*levassiez.*	
Qu' ils	*se*	*levassent.*	

PLUPERFECT.

			[That I might have risen
Que je	*me*	*fusse*	*levé.*
Que tu	*te*	*fusses*	*levés.*
Qu' il	*se*	*fût*	*levés.*
Que nous	*nous*	*fussions*	*levés.*
Que vous	*vous*	*fussiez*	*levés.*
Qu' ils	*se*	*fussent*	*levés.*

REFLECTIVE AND INTERROGATIVE.

99. **S'ASSEOIR:**

Present Indicative: *Est-ce que je m'assieds?*—See p. 49, No. 55.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

			[Do I sit down.
M'	*assieds-*	*je?*	
T'	*assieds-*	*tu?*	
S'	*assied-*	*il?*	
Nous	*asseyons-*	*nous?*	
Vous	*asseyez-*	*vous?*	
S'	*asseient-*	*ils?*	

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

			[Have I sat down?
Me	*suis-*	*je*	*assis?*
T'	*es-*	*tu*	*assis?*
S'	*est-*	*il*	*assis?*
Nous	*sommes-*	*nous*	*assis?*
Vous	*êtes-*	*vous*	*assis?*
Se	*sont-*	*ils*	*assis?*

IMPERFECT.

[Was I sitting down ?

M'	*asseyais-*	*je ?*
T'	*asseyais-*	*tu ?*
S'	*asseyait-*	*il ?*
Nous	*asseyions-*	*nous ?*
Vous	*asseyiez-*	*vous ?*
S'	*asseyaient-*	*ils ?*

PLUPERFECT.

[Had I sat down ?

M'	*étais-*	*je*	*assis ?*
T'	*étais-*	*tu*	*assis ?*
S'	*était-*	*il*	*assis ?*
Nous	*étions-*	*nous*	*assis ?*
Vous	*étiez-*	*vous*	*assis ?*
S'	*étaient-*	*ils*	*assis ?*

PERFECT

[Did I sit down ?

M'	*assis-*	*je ?*
T'	*assis-*	*tu ?*
S'	*assit-*	*il ?*
Nous	*assîmes-*	*nous ?*
Vous	*assîtes-*	*vous ?*
S'	*assirent-*	*ils ?*

PERFECT ANTERIOR.

[Had I sat down.

Me	*fus-*	*je*	*assis ?*
Te	*fus-*	*tu*	*assis ?*
Se	*fut-*	*il*	*assis ?*
Nous	*fûmes-*	*nous*	*assis ?*
Vous	*fûtes-*	*vous*	*assis ?*
Se	*furent-*	*ils*	*assis ?*

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

[Shall I sit down.

M'	*assiérai-*	*je ?*
T'	*assiéras-*	*tu ?*
S'	*assiéra-t-*	*il ?*
Nous	*assiérons-*	*nous ?*
Vous	*assiérez-*	*vous ?*
S'	*assiéront-*	*ils ?*

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

[Shall I have sat down ?

Me	*serai-*	*je*	*assis ?*
Te	*seras-*	*tu*	*assis ?*
Se	*sera-t-*	*il*	*assis ?*
Nous	*serons-*	*nous*	*assis ?*
Vous	*serez-*	*vous*	*assis ?*
Se	*seront-*	*ils*	*assis ?*

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

[Should I sit down.

M'	*assiérais-*	*je ?*
T'	*assiérais-*	*tu ?*
S'	*assiérait-*	*il ?*
Nout	*assiérions-*	*nous ?*
Vous	*assiériez-*	*vous ?*
S'	*assiéraient-*	*ils ?*

CONDITIONAL PAST.

[Sould I have sat down.

Me	*serais-*	*je*	*assis ?*
Te	*serais-*	*tu*	*assis ?*
Se	*serait-*	*il*	*assis ?*
Nous	*serions-*	*nous*	*assis ?*
Vous	*seriez-*	*vous*	*assis ?*
Se	*seraients*	*ils*	*assis ?*

100. A few tenses interrogativeley and negativeley ; and affirmatively and negatively :

[I do not rise.

Je	*ne*	*me*	*lève*	*pas ?*
Tu	*ne*	*te*	*lèves*	*pas ?*
Il	*ne*	*se*	*lève*	*pas ?*
Nous	*ne*	*nous*	*levons*	*pas ?*
Vous	*ne*	*vous*	*levez*	*pas ?*
Ils	*ne*	*se*	*lèvent*	*pas ?*

[I have not risen.

Je	*ne*	*me*	*suis*	*pas levé.*
Tu	*ne*	*t'*	*es*	*pas levé.*
Il	*ne*	*s'*	*est*	*pas levé.*
Nous	*ne*	*nous*	*sommes*	*pas levé.*
Vous	*ne*	*vous*	*êtes*	*pas levé.*
Ils	*ne*	*se*	*sont*	*pas levés.*

[Shall I not rise ?				[Had I not sat down ?			
Ne me	*lèverai-*	*je*	*pas ?*	*Ne m'*	*étais-*	*je*	*pas assis ?*
Ne te	*lèveras-*	*tu*	*pas ?*	*Ne t'*	*étais-*	*tu*	*pas assis ?*
Ne se	*lèvera-t-*	*il*	*pas ?*	*Ne s'*	*était-*	*il*	*pas assis ?*
Ne nous	*lèverons-*	*nous*	*pas ?*	*Ne nous*	*étions-*	*nous*	*pas assis ?*
Ne vous	*lèverez-*	*vous*	*pas ?*	*Ne vous*	*étiez-*	*vous*	*pas assis ?*
Ne se	*lèveront-*	*ils*	*pas ?*	*Ne s'*	*étaient-*	*ils*	*pas assis ?*

IMPERATIVE NEGATIVE.

Ne	*t' assieds*	*pas.*	Do not sit down.
Qu'il ne	*s' asseie*	*pas.*	Let him not sit down.
Ne nous	*asseyons*	*pas.*	Let us not sit down.
Ne vous	*asseyez*	*pas.*	Do not sit down.
Qu 'ils ne	*s' asseient*	*pas.*	Let them not sit down.

A LIST.

s'adresser,	to apply oneself.	*se fâcher,*	to get angry.
se baigner,	to bathe.	*s'attendre,*	to expect.
se dépêcher,	to make haste.	*se réunir,*	to assemble.
s'enrhumer,	to catch a cold.	*se tromper,*	to be mistaken.

IMPERSONAL VERBS.

101. IMPERSONAL VERBS better called UNIPERSONAL, so named because only used in the 3rd person singular.

Inf.		Pres. Part.	Past Part.
arriver,	to happen,	*arrivant,*	*arrivé,*
neiger,	to snow.	*neigeant,*	*neigé,*
geler,	to freeze,	*gelant,*	*gelé.*
dégeler,	to thaw,	*dégelant,*	*dégelé.*
grêler,	to hail,	*grêlant,*	*grêlé.*
falloir,	to be necessary,	no Pres. Part.	*fallu.*

ARRIVER.

Il arrive,	It happens. *Il est arrivé,* It has happened
Il arrivait,	It happened.
Il arriva,	It happened.
Il arrivera,	It will happen.
Il arriverait,	It would happen.

Qu'il arrive, That it may happen.
Qu'il arrivât, That it might happen.

Its compound tenses are conjugated with *Etre.*

102. FALLOIR.

Il faut, It is necessary. *Il a fallu,* It has been [necessary.
Il fallait, It was necessary.
Il fallut, It was necessary.
Il faudra, It shall be necessary.
Il faudrait, It should be necessary.
Qu'il faille, That it may be necessary.
Qu'il fallût, That it might be necessary.

PLEUVOIR.

103. *Pleuvoir,* to rain; *pleuvant, plu.*

Il pleut, It is raining. *Il a plu,* It has rained.
Il pleuvait, It was raining.
Il plut, It was raining.
Il pleuvra, It shall rain.
Il pleuvrait, It should rain.
Qu'il pleuve, That it may rain.
Qu'il plût, That it might rain.

Y AVOIR.

104. *Y avoir,* there to be; *y ayant,* there being; *eu,* been.

Il y a, There is or there are. *Il y a eu,* There has been.
Il y avait, There was or were.
Il y eut There was or were.
Il y aura, There will be.
Il y aurait, There would be.
Qu'il y ait, That there may be.
Qu'il y eut, That there might be.

Rem.—Unipersonal verbs are conjugated according to the conjugation they belong to, but only in the 3rd singular.

FORMATION OF THE TENSES FOR THE FOUR REGULAR CONJUGATIONS.

(See pages 124–28–30–32.)

105. There are *five primitive tenses*, or tenses used or said to form the others; they are:

1. The PRESENT INFINITIVE, forming two tenses.
2. The PRESENT PARTICIPLE, " three "
3. The PAST PARTICIPLE, all the compound tenses.
4. The PRESENT INDICATIVE, forming one tense.
5. The PRETERITE DEFINITE, " one "

106. The INFINITIVE PRESENT forms the *Future* and *Conditional* by changing:

	ER,	IR,	EVOIR,	RE,	into:
1st	*erai,*	*irai,*	*evrai,*	*rai,*	Future.
2nd	*erais,*	*irais,*	*evrais,*	*rais,*	Conditional.

(See page 123.)

107. The PRESENT PARTICIPLE forms the *three* persons plural of the *Indicative Present*, the *Imperfect Indicative* and the *Present Subjunctive*, by changing:

	1st conj.	2nd conj.	3rd conj.	4th conj.
	ANT,	ISSANT,	EVANT,	ANT, into:
	PRESENT INDICATIVE.			
1st	*ons,*	*issons,*	*evons,*	*ont,*
	ez,	*issez,*	*evez,*	*ez,*
	ent,	*issent,*	*oivent,*	*ent,*
	IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.			
2nd	*ais,*	*issais,*	*evais,*	*ais, etc.*
	SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.			
3rd	*e,*	*isse,*	*oive,*	*e.*
	es,	*isses,*	*oives,*	*es.*
	e,	*isse,*	*oive,*	*e.*
	ions,	*issions,*	*evions,*	*ions.*

iez,	*issiez,*	*eviez,*	*iez.*
ent,	*issent,*	*oivent,*	*ent.*

108. The Past Participle forms all compound tenses with the help of *Avoir* and *Etre* :

J'ai parlé,	I have spoken.
Je suis écouté,	I am listened to.
Je me suis levé,	I have risen, got up.

109. The Present Indicative, forms the Imperative by suppressing the pronouns of the 2nd person singular, 1st and 2nd person plural, used as nominatives :

	1st conj.	2nd conj.	3rd conj.	4th conj.	
2nd p. sing.	*es,*	*is,*	*ois,*	*s,*	Indicative.
1st p. pl.	*ons*	*issons,*	*evons,*	*ons,*	
2nd p. pl.	*ez,*	*issez,*	*evez,*	*ez,*	

INTO :

2nd p. sing.	**e,*	*is,*	*ois,*	*s,*	Imperative.
1st p. pl.	*ons,*	*issons,*	*evons,*	*ons,*	
2nd p. pl.	*ez,*	*issez,*	*evez,*	*ez,*	

* Rem.—Verbs of the first conjugation and others, ending with *es* in the Present Indicative, 2nd person singular and *vas,* go ; drop the (*s*) in the Imperative, except before the words *en, y.*

110. The Perfect Definite forms the Imperfect Subjunctive by changing the following of the Preterite :

1st conj.	2nd conj.	3rd conj	4th conj.	
AI,	IS,	US,	IS, etc.,	into :
asse,	*isse,*	*usse,*	*isse,*	
asses,	*isses,*	*usses,*	*isses.*	
ât,	*it,*	*ût,*	*it.*	
assions,	*issions,*	*ussions,*	*issions.*	
assiez,	*issiez,*	*ussiez,*	*issiez.*	
assent,	*issent,*	*ussent,*	*issent.*	

By following exactly the rules given No. 104, and others, it will be easy to learn all the regular French verbs.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

We call irregular verbs those that are in their primitive and derivative tenses, not precisely like the four conjugations given as models, pages 124-28-30-32.

—

THE ALMOST INVARIABLE TERMINATIONS OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF 2ND, 3RD AND 4TH CONJUGATIONS.

(See page 121.)

They are :

FOR THE PRESENT INDICATIVE

Sing.	(sometimes,)	Pl.	
1. *s*,	*x*,	*ons*,	Verbs of one syllable.
2. *s*,	*x*,	*ez*,	
3. *t*,	*c*, *d*,	*ent*,	*ont*.

FOR THE IMPERFECT INDIC.

Sing.	Pl.
1. *ais*,	*ions*,
2. *ais*,	*iez*,
3. *ait*,	*aient*.

FOR THE PRETERITE DEFINITE.

Sing.	Pl.
1. *s*,	*mes*,
2. *s*,	*tes*,
3. *t*,	*rent*,

FOR THE FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Sing.	Pl.
1. *rai*,	*rons*,
2. *ras*,	*rez*,
3. *ra*,	*ront*.

FOR THE CONDITIONAL.

Sing.	Pl.
1. *rais*,	*rions*,
2. *rais*,	*riez*,
3. *rait*,	*raient*.

FOR THE IMPERATIVE, (like the PRESENT INDICATIVE.)

Sing.	Pl.
1.	*ons*,
2. *s*, *t*,	*ez*,

FOR THE PRES. SUBJ.

Sing.	Pl.
1. *e*,	*ions*,
2. *es*,	*iez*,
3. *e*,	*ent*.

FOR THE IMPERF. OF THE SUBJ.

Sing.	Pl.
1. *sse*,	*ssions*,
2. *sses*,	*ssiez*,
3. *t*,	*ssent*.

REM.—Whatever may be the root of the tense given, knowing the first singular, you simply add the remainder of the termination to the root,

REM.—For example, take the future *j'irai*, I shall go ; were it regular, it should be *allerai*, according to page 141, No. 106 ;

but being irregular, the *all* has been changed into *i*, and the regular ending *erai* into *rai*; therefore by following the rest of the endings of the future we shall have :

J'	*i*	*rai,*	*Nous*	*i*	*rons,*
Tu	*i*	*ras,*	*Vous*	*i*	*rez,*
Il	*i*	*ra,*	*Ils*	*i*	*ront.*

and this applies to all tenses and verbs.

FORMATION OF THE TENSES OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

As with regular verbs, there are five primitive tenses ; see page 141.

1. The Present Infinitive forms the *Future* and *Conditional*, by changing the final *r* of the 2nd and 3rd conjugation, and the *re* of the 4th, into :

Future,		Conditional.	
rai,	*rons,*	*rais,*	*rions,*
ras,	*rez,*	*rais,*	*riez,*
ra,	*ront.*	*rait,*	*raient.*

2. The Present Participle forms the three persons plural of the *Indicative*, the *Imperfect*, of the Indicative and the *Present Subjunctive* ; by changing *ant* into ;

Ind. Present.		Imperf. Ind.		Pres. Subj.	
1.	*ons,*	1. *ais,*	*ions,*	1. *e,*	*ions,*
2.	*ez,*	2. *ais,*	*iez,*	2. *es,*	*iez,*
3.	*ent.*	3. *ait,*	*aient.*	3. *e,*	*ent.*

3. The Present Indicative, forms the *Imperative* by suppressing the pronouns used as nominatives as :

tu	*s,*	into :	*s.*
nous,	*ons,*		*ons.*
vous,	*ez.*		*ez.*

4. The Preterite Definite forms the *Imperfect Subjunctive* by changing its final *s* of the 1st singular into :

1. *sse,* *ssions,*
2. *sses,* *ssiez,*
3. *t,* *ssent,*

and always placing a (^) over the vowel preceding the *t* of the 3rd singular, an if there be none, over the vowel of the root.

5. The Past Participle forms all compound tenses with the aid of *Avoir* and *Etre.*—See page 142, No. 108.

Remarks.—The verbs *Avoir* and *Etre* are not comprised in the above rules as they are given in full, and greatly deviate from them.

IMPORTANT OBSERVATIONS.

All through out the irregular verbs, as soon as the word *reg.* or *regular* occurs in the *Tableau Général,* page 146, the pupil must at once refer to the formation of tenses in irregular verbs.

Whenever a tense can not regularly be formed from its primitive, it is given in full for the *Present Indicative* and *Subjunctive,* and only the first person singular for the others; for it shall be easy to the learner knowing the 1st singular to go on with the rest of the terminations which he must have learnt previously, or refer again to his list of irregular terminations.

The *Plan* hitherto pursued in French Grammars, of giving the irregular verbs at full length, has been in my candid opinion, extremely pernicious to beginners, because they have trusted to their memory without caring whether they understood their verbs or not, and after a day or two have forgotten them. I have witnessed this same defect with advanced pupils.

If I lay a great stress on the irregular verbs, it is because they are most important; and I may say it is perfectly absurd for teachers to make their pupils translate free French, who have not learned their irregular verbs: *therefore, the third part or Reading book will prove of the greatest necessity, till the pupil is sufficiently advanced to undertake the task of finding readily in a good Dictionary, the words he wants.*

TABLEAU GENERAL OF ALL THE

SHOWING AT ONE GLANCE THEIR

FIRST

PRIMITIVE TENSE.	DERIVATIVE TENSES.		PRIMITIVE TENSE.	DERIV
Infinitive.	Future Absolute.	Conditional Present.	Present Participle.	Imperf. Ind.
ALL ER, *to go.*	j'i rai.	j'i rais.	all ant.	*Reg.*

REMARKS ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

1. *Aller*, is conjugated in its compound tenses with the auxiliary *Etre*, so that the Past Participle must agree with the nominative of the verb in gender and in number: *Elle est allée se promener*—She is gone to take a walk.

J'ai été, etc., means that I have gone and returned; but *je suis allé, etc.*, means that I have gone and not returned.

2. *S'en aller;* is conjugated like *aller;* and in its simple tenses by placing: *je m'en, tu t'en, il s'en, nous nous en, vous vous en, ils s'en*, before the simple tense of *aller;* and in interrogations, by placing *je, tu, il, nous, vous, ils*, after the verb. In compound tenses, by placing *je m'en, etc.*, before the simple tenses of *Etre* followed by *allé* or *allés*.

PRINCIPAL IRREGULAR VERBS,

REGULARITIES AND IRREGULARITIES.

CONJUGATION.

ATIVE TENSES.	PRIM. AND DER. TENSE.	DERIVATIVE.	PRIMITIVE	DERIVATIVE.	PRIMITIVE.
Present Subjunctive.	Present Indicative.	Imperative.	Preterite Definite.	Imperfect Subjunctive	Past Particip.
aille, ailles, aille. allions, iez, aillent.	vais, vas, vais. allons, allez, vont.	va, allons, allez.	j'all ai.	*Regular.*	all é.

Je	*m'*	*en vais,*	*Je*	*m'*	*en*	*suis*	*allé,*
Tu	*t'*	*en vas,*	*Tu*	*t'*	*en*	*es*	*allé,*
Il	*s'*	*en va,*	*Il*	*s'*	*en*	*est*	*allé,*
Nous	*nous*	*en allons,*	*Nous*	*nous*	*en*	*sommes*	*allés.*
Vous	*vous*	*en allez,*	*Vous*	*vous*	*en*	*êtes*	*allés,*
Ils	*s'*	*en vont.*	*Ils*	*s'*	*en*	*sont*	*allés.*

REM.—There are at least 5000 verbs, if not more, which belong to the 1st conj., and which are regularly formed after *chanter.*

Reg. or regular all throughout these irregular verbs, means that those tenses so named are regular, according to the primitive tenses from which they are formed.

The 1st conjugation has but three irregular verbs : *aller,* which has been given, *envoyer,* and *renvoyer* which are conjugated like *chanter,* P. 124, and are irregular only in the Future and Conditional Pres; *J'enver rai, j'enver rais.*

SECOND

PRIMITIVE TENSE.	DERIVATIVE TENSES.		PRIMITIVE TENSE.	DERIV
INFINITIVE.	Future Absolute.	Conditional Present.	Present Participle.	Imperf. Ind.
ACQUÉR IR, *to acquire.*	j'acquier rai.	j'acquier rais.	acquér ant.	*Regular.*
BOUILL IR, *to boil.*	*Regular.*	*Regular.*	bouill ant.	do
COUR IR, *to run.*	je cour rai.	je cour rais.	cour ant.	do
CUEILL IR, *to gather.*	je cueille rai.	je cueille rais	cueill ant.	do
FAILL IR, *to fail.*	*Regular.*	*Regular.*	faill ant.	do
FU IR, *to shun, to fly away.*	do	do	fuy ant.	do
MENT IR, *to lie, tell an untruth.*	do	do	ment ant.	do
MOUR IR, *to die.*	je mour rai.	je mour rais.	mour ant.	do
OFFR IR, *to offer.*	*Regular.*	*Regular.*	offr ant.	do
OU IR, *to hear.*	j'ouï rai.	j'ouï rais.	*none.*	*none.*
TEN IR, *to hold.*	je tiend rai.	je tiend rais.	ten ant.	do
VET IR, *to clothe.*	*Regular.*	*Regular*	vêt ant.	do

REMARKS ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

In this way we see that the second conjugation of irregular verbs is divided into *twelve* principal heads of verbs from which other derivatives are conjugated.

1. ACQUERIR, has *conquérir*, to conquer; not often used, except in the Future and the compound tenses.

2. REQUERIR, to request; a law expression.

3. S'ENQUERIR, to inquire; often used in the Infinitive and the compound tenses: *je me suis enquis.*

4. QUERIR, rather old, meaning to fetch; is only used in the Infinitive.

5. CUEILLIR, to gather, has *assaillir*, to assault; *tressaillir*, to be started; *accueillir*, to welcome; *recueillir*, to collect; and

CONJUGATION.

ATIVE TENSES	PRIM. AND DER. TENSE.	DERIVATIVE.	PRIMITIVE TENSE.	DER. TENS.	P. TENS
Present Subjunctive.	Present Indicative.	Imperative.	Preterite Definite.	Imperfect subjunctive.	Past Particip.
acquière, ières, ières, ions, iez, ièrent. *Regular.*	acquiers, iers, iert, ons, ez, ièrent.	*Regular.*	j'acqui s.	*Regular.*	acquis.
do	bous, bous, bont, *Pl. reg.*	do	je bouilli s.	do	bouilli.
do	cours, rs, rt. *pl. reg.*	do	je couru s.	do	couru.
do	cueille, es, e, *pl. reg.*	do	je cueilli s.	do	cueilli.
do	faux, x, t, *pl. reg.*	do	je failli s.	do	failli.
do	je fuis. fuis, fuit, *pl. reg.*	do	je fui s.	do	fui.
do	mens, s, t, *pl. reg.*	do	je menti s.	do	menti.
meure, es, e, mourions, iez, meurent. *Regular.*	meurs, rs, rt, mourons, ez, meurent.	do	je mourus.	do	mort.
None.	j'offre, es, e. *pl. reg.*	do	j'offri s.	do	offert.
	None.	*None.*	j'ouï s.	do	ouï.
tienne, es, e, tenions, iez, tiennent. *Regular.*	je tiens, s, t. *pl. reg.* tiennent.	*Regular.*	je tin s.	do	tenu.
	vêts, vêts, vêt. *pl. reg.*	do	je vtiê s.	do	vêtu.

also *tressaillir*, to start, to be started, which are conjugated in the same way,

IRREGULARITIES IN MOST GRAMMARS.

6. Assaillir, to assault, and *tressaillir*, to be started; should follow the exact conjugation of *cueillir*, as given in the Tableau. Still, some grammarians make *assaillir*, and *tressaillir* regular according to their Infinitives; that is to say, they make their Futures to be *je tressaillirai* and *j'assaillirai* instead of *tressaillerai* and *assaillerai* like *cueillerai*, their Present Indicatives are: *je cueille, je tressaille, j'assaille.*

7. Fuir, to shun has *s'enfuir*, to run away.

8. Courir has:

accourir,	to run to.	*concourir*,	to concur.
discourir,	to discourse.	*parcourir*,	to run over.
encourir,	to incur.	*secourir*,	to succor.

9. Bouillir, has *rebouillir*, to boil again. See *bouillir*.

Ebouillir, to boil away; used only in the Infinitive Present and Past Participle, *ébouilli*, *e*.

Bouillir, itself is generally used with *faire*:

Faites bouillir l'eau, Make the water boil.

10. Mentir, to lie, has:

endormir,	to lull asleep.	*partir*,	to set out.
s'endormir,	to fall asleep.	*repartir*,	to set out again.
dormir,	to sleep.	*sentir*,	to feel. [to reply
ressentir,	to resent.	*démentir*,	to belie.
sortir,	to go out.	*pressentir*,	to foresee.
ressortir,	to go out again.	*se repentir*,	to repent.
consentir,	to consent.	*se rendormir*,	to fall asleep
desservir,	to clear the table, to do an ill office, to act against one.		[again.

11. Ressortir, to go out again; is conjugated like *mentir*.

Ressortir, to be dependant upon, belonging to; in that sense is like *choisir* and consequently regular.

12. Repartir, to set off, out again; ist just like *partir* or *mentir*; but *répartir*, with the (') and meaning to share, to divide, is regular like *finir*.

13. Offrir, to offer, has:

couvrir,	to cover.	*souffrir*,	to suffer.
recouvrir,	to cover again.	*ouvrir*,	to open.
découvrir,	to discover.		

All verbs ending with *frir*, *vrir*, are conjugated alike.

14. Tenir, to hold, to keep:

s'abstenir,	to abstain oneself from.
entretenir,	to keep up, to converse.

appartenir,	to belong.	*devenir,*	to become.
contenir,	to contain.	*intervenir,*	to intervene.
maintenir,	to maintain.	*parvenir,*	to succeed.
obtenir,	to obtain.	*prévenir,*	to anticipate.
retenir,	to retain.	*revenir,*	to come back.
soutenir,	to sustain.	*se souvenir,*	to remember.
venir,	to come.	*se ressouvenir,*	to recollect.
convenir,	to agree, to suit.	*subvenir,*	to relieve.

REMAR.—*Venir, devenir, parvenir,* are generally conjugated with *Etre* in their compound tenses.

Convenir, meaning to suit, takes *avoir ;* meaning to agree takes *Etre.*

REM.—It must be remarked that verbs in *enir* double the (*n*) when followed by *e, es, ent,* unaccented.

15. VETIR has *se vêtir,* to clothe oneself ; *revêtir,* to invest, to put clothes on ; *se revêtir,* to invest oneself ; *se dévêtir,* to divest, to take clothes off.

16. HAÏR, to hate ; is a regular verb ; it must be remarked that it takes two dots or diærises (¨) over the *i* in all its conjugation, except on the *three persons singular* of the Present Indicatif and *2nd singular* of the Imperative.

17. BÉNIR, to bless ; is also regular. It peculiarity is that it has two Past Participles : *béni,* in its proper sense ; *bénit* with a (*t*) in its figurative signification :

Figurative.	*Du pain* bénit Holy bread.	*De l'eau* bénite, Holy water.
Proper.	*Dieu a* béni *cette famille,* God has blessed that familly.	

18. Fleurir, to blosom, bioom ; is regular. Its peculiarities are that it changes its root *fleu* into *flo* in the Present Participle and Imperfect Indicative only in a figurative sense.

La ville de Toronto florissant en commerce et en sciences.
The City of Toronto flourishing in commerce and sciences.

19. Ouïr is used in the Preterite Definite, Future, Conditional Present and Imperfect Subjunctive ; also in its Past Participle, *ouï*, m. or *ouïe*, f. ; is obsolete in the other tenses or moods : it means to hear by report ; or like *entendre*, to hear by paying attention to what is said. We say : *je l'ai ouï dire*, I have heard it said.
Tu ouïras la messe le dimanche, Thou shalt hear mass on Sunday.

20. Ferir, means to strike ; rather obsolete, except in the Infinitive in this phrase :

Nous nous emparâmes de la ville sans coup férir.
We took possession of the town without striking a blow.

Féru, its Past Participle is very seldom used.

21. Saillir, to project ; only used in the Infinitive and Present Participle, *saillant*.

Saillir, meaning to gush out, to spring up ; has its Past Participle *sailli*, conjugated with *Avoir*; its other tenses are obsolete. Still, we say : *les eaux saillissent*, the waters gush out.

22. Gesir, is not used any more in the Infinitive Present, and means to lie down. Still, we say : *il gît, nous gissons vous gissez, ils gisent, il gisait, gisant*, lying down ; *ci-gît*, here lies.

23. Se Mourir, to be dying, to be on the point of death ; is conjugated only in the Present Indicative and Imperfect Indicative.

PRACTICAL LESSON,

ON THE FORMATION OF THE TENSES.

As each primitive tense is placed close to its derivative tense or tenses, by following the rules and terminations, at page 143 and 144, the difficulties will soon disappear.

Let us take *Acquérir.*

The *Infinitive* forms the Future and Conditional; therefore, it should be, by changing the letter (*r*) into *rai*, and the rest according to No. 1, page 144; *acquérirai*: not being so, it is given in the *Tableau*, and *acquer* becomes the root and *rai* the termination.

The *Present Participle*, *acquérant*, forms the three persons plural of the Present Indicative; therefore according to No. 2, page 144, we change *ant* into *ons*, *ez*, *ent;* then we shall have *acquérons*, *acquérez*—regular; but we have *acquièrent* for the 3rd person plural, instead of *acquèrent*; it must then be irregular in that 3rd pl.

In the same manner, the *Subjunctive Present* is irregular in the 1st, 2nd, 3rd sing., and 3rd pl.; and regular in the 1st and 2nd pl.; because were it regular all through, it would be changing *ant*, into: *e*, *es*, *e*, *ions*, *iez*, *ent; acquèr e*, *es*, *e*, *ions*, *iez*, *ent*, ; but it is *acquier e*, *es*, *e*, ——*ent;* therefore the 1st, 2nd, 3rd sing., and 3rd pl. are irregular, not in the terminations, but in the root.

The *Present Indicative* forms the Imperative by suppressing its pronouns used as nominatives; it shall be simple enough to make

tu acquiers, *nous acquérons*, *vous acquérez*,

into: *acquiers*, *acquérons*, *acquérez.*

The 3rd persons sing. and pl. of the *Imperative* are always the same as the 3rd persons sing. and plural of the Present Subjunctive.

The *Preterite* forms the Imperfect of the Subjunctive by changing its (*s*) of the first singular into *sse*, *sses*, *t*, *ssions*, *ssiez*, *ssent;* having *acquis*, it must give *acquisse*, *acquisses*, *acquît*, *acquissions*, *acquissiez*, *acquissent.*

The *Past Participle* forms all compound tenses by prefixing to it either *Avoir* or *Etre.* So, we have, *j'ai acquis*, etc., *je suis aimé.*

☞ The Rules are precise, and if followed must work out all the irregular verbs in the same manner; and their tenses, as I have said it before, that cannot be subjected to the rules, are given in full for the Present Indicative and Subjunctive, and only in the 1st singular for the others, as is the case for *acquérir.*

TABLEAU GÉNÉRAL, Etc.—THIRD

PRIMITIVE TENSE.		DERIVATIVE TENSES.		PRIM. TENS.	DERIV
INFINITIVE.		Future Absolute.	Conditional Present.	Present Participle.	Imperf. Ind.
ASSE OIR,	*to sit.*	j'assié rai.	j'assiérais.	assey ant.	*Regular.*
CH OIR,	*to fall.*	*none.*	*none.*	*none.*	*none.*
DÉCH OIR,	*to decay.*	je décher rai.	je décherrais	do	do
ECH OIR,	*to fall due.*	j'écher rai.	j'écherrais.	éché ant.	do
FAILL OIR,	*to be necessary.*	il faud ra.	il faudrait.	*none.*	il fallait.
MOUV OIR,	*to move.*	je mouv rai,	je mouvrais.	mouv ant.	*Regular.*
POURV OIR,	*to provide.*	*Regular.*	*Reg.*	pourvoy ant.	do
POUV OIR,	*to be able.*	je pour rai.	je pourrais	pouv ant.	do
PRÉVAL OIR,	*to prevail.*	je prévaud-rai.	je prévaud-rais.	préval ant.	do
PRÉV OIR,	*to foresee.*	*Regular.*	*Regular.*	prévoy ant.	do
SAV OIR,	*to know.*	je sau rai.	je sau rais.	sach ant.	savais, s, t, ions, iez, aient
VAL OIR,	*to be worth.*	je vaud rai.	je vaud rais.	val ant.	*Regular.*
V OIR,	*to see.*	je ver rai.	je ver rais.	voy ant.	do
VOUL OIR,	*to wish, to be willing.*	je voud rai.	je voud rais.	voul ant.	do
SE OIR,	*to sit.*	*none.*	*none.*	sé ant.	*none.*
SE OIR,	*to suit, fit.*	il siéra, sié-ront.	il siérait, sié-raient.	séy ant.	il seyait, ils seyaient
SURSE OIR,	*to put off.*	*Regular.*	*Regular.*	sursoy ant.	*Regular.*

REMARKS ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

1. ASSEOIR, has *s'asseoir*, to sit down, *lit.* to sit oneself.

2. DECHOIR, to fall; as in this sense:

Il est déchu dans l'estime du public,
He is fallen in the esteem of the public;

it is conjugated with *Etre* or with *Avoir*.

3. MOUVOIR, to move; has *promouvoir*, to promote; and *émouvoir*, to move in a moral way.

(*Continué.*)

CONJUGATION.

ATIVE TENSES	PRIM. & DER. T.	DER. TEN	PRIM. TENS.	DER. TENS	P. TENS
Present Subjunctive.	Present Indicative.	Impera-tive.	Preterite Definite.	Imperfect Sujunctive.	Past Particip.
Regular.	assieds, ds, d, asseyons, ez, asseient.	*Regular.*	j'assi s.	*Regular.*	assis.
none.	*none.*	*none.*	*none.*	*none.*	chu.
déchoie, es, e. déchoyions, iez, ent.	déchois, s, t, déchoyons, ez, oient.	*Regular.*	je déchu s.	*Regular.*	déchu.
échoie, oies, oie. *pl. reg* oient.	échois, s, t, or échet échéons, ez, ent or	do	j'échu s.	do	échu.
qu'il faille.	il faut. [oient.	*none.*	il fallut.	qu'il fallût.	fallu.
meuve, es, e, mouvions, iez, meuvent.	meus, s, t, mouvons, ez, meuvent.	*Regular.*	je mu s.	*Regular.*	mu.
Regular.	pourvois, s, t, pourvoyons, ez, oient.	do	je pourvu s.	do	pourvu.
puisse, es, e, puissions, iez, ent.	peux, or puis, peux. peut, pouvons, ez,	*none.*	je pu s.	do	pu.
Regular.	prévaux, [peuvent.	*Regular.*	je prévalu s.	do	prévalu.
Regular.	aux, aut. *pl. reg.* prévois, ois, oit. *pl. reg.*	do	je prévi s.	do	prévu.
Regular.	sais, s, t, savons, ez, ent.	*Regular.*	je su s.	do	su.
vaille, es, e, valions, iez, vaill nt.	vaux, aux, aut. *pl. reg.*	do	je valu s.	de	valu.
Regular.	vois. s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	je vi s.	do	vu.
veuille, es, e, voulions, iez, veuillent.	veux, x, t, voulons ez, veulent.	veuillez.	je voulu s.	do	voulu.
none.	*none.*	*none.*	*none.*	*none.*	sis.
do	il sied, ils siéent.	do	do	do	*none.*
surseoie, es, e, sursoyions, ez, ent.	surseois, eois, eoit, oyons. ez. eoient.	*Regular.*	je sursi s.	*Regular.*	sursis.

4 Pouvoir has no Imperative; but we use the Subjunctive in its stead. *Puissiez-vous*, may you.

5. Valoir has *équivaloir*, to be equivalent; and *revaloir*, to give the like for the like.

6. Voir has *entrevoir*, to have a glimpse of, and *revoir*, to see again.

7. Vouloir, has for Imperative only the second plural *veuillez.*

The third conjugation, as it may be seen, is not very large and can easily be learned.

TABLEAU GÉNÉRAL, Etc.—FOURTH

PRIMITIVE TENSE.	DERIVATIVE TENSES.		PRIM. TEN.	DERIV
INFINITIVE.	Future Absolute.	Conditional Present.	Present Participle.	Imperf. Ind.
ABSOUD RE, *to absolve.*	*Regular.*	*Regular.*	absolv ant.	*Regular.*
ATTRAI RE, *to attract.*	do	do	*none.*	*none.*
BATT RE, *to beat.*	do	do	batt ant.	*Regular.*
BOI RE, *to drink.*	do	do	buv ant.	do
BRAI RE, *to bray.*	il braira, ils brairont.	il brairait, ils brairaient.	bray ant.	*none.*
BRUI RE, *to roar.*	*none.*	*none.*	bruy ant.	il bruyait, ils bruyaient
CIRCONCI RE, *to circumcise.*	*Regular.*	*Regular.*	circoncis ant.	*Regular.*
CLO RE, *to close, to shut.*	je clôrai.	je clôrais.	clos ant.	do
CONCLU RE, *to conclude.*	*Regular.*	*Regular.*	conclu ant.	do
CONDUI RE, *to conduct.*	do	do	conduis ant.	do
CONFI RE, *to pickle, preserve.*	do	do	confis ant.	do
CONNAÎT RE, *to be acquainted.*	do	do	connaiss ant.	do
COUD RE, *to sew.*	do	do	cous ant.	do
CRAIND RE, *to fear.*	do	do	craign ant.	do
CROI RE, *to believe.*	do	do	croy ant.	do
CROÎT RE, *to grow.*	do	do	croiss ant.	do
DI RE, *to say.*	do	do	dis ant.	do
ÉCLO RE, *to hatch, to come to light*	il éclora, ils écloront.	il éclôrait, ils éclôraient.	*none.*	*not used.*
ÉCRI RE, *to write.*	*Regular.*	*Regular.*	écriv ant.	*Regular.*
FAI RE, *to do, make.*	je fe rai.	je fe rais.	fais ant or fe sant.	do
FRI RE, *to fry.*	*not used.*	*not used.*	*none.*	*none.*
LI RE, *to read.*	*Regular.*	*Regular.*	lis ant.	*Regular.*
LUI RE, *to shine.*	do	do	luis ant.	do
MAUDI RE, *to curse.*	do	do	maudiss ant.	do
METT RE, *to put.*	do	do	mett ant.	do
MOUD RE, *to grind.*	do	do	moul ant.	do
NAÎT RE, *to be born.*	do	do	naiss ant.	do
NUI RE, *to hurt.*	do	do	nuis ant.	do

(*Continued.*)

CONJUGATION.

ATIVE TENSES.	PRIM. & DER. T.	DER. TENSE.	PRIM. TEN	D. TEN	P. TEN.
Present Subjunctive.	Present Indicative.	Imperative.	Preterite Definite.	Imperf. Subj.	Past Particip.
Regular.	absous, s, t. *pl. reg.*	*Regular.*	*none.*	*none.*	absous-te
attraie, es, e, attrayions, iez, ent.	*none.*	*none.*	do	do	*none.*
Regular.	bats, ts, t. *pl. reg.*	*Regular.*	je battis.	*Reg.*	battu.
boive, es, e, buvions, iez, boivent.	bois, e, t, buvons, ez, boivent.	do	je bu s.	do	bu.
qu'il braie, qu'ils braient.	il brait, ils braient.	*none.*	*none.*	do	*none.*
none.	il bruit, ils bruient	do	do	do	do.
Regular.	je circoncis, s, t, *pl. reg.*	*Regular.*	je circoncis	*Reg.*	circoncis
do	clos, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	*none.*	*none.*	clos.
do	conclus, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	je conclus.	*Reg.*	conclu.
do	conduis, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	je conduisis	do	conduit.
do	confis, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	je confis.	do	confit.
do	connais, s, t, *pl. reg.*	do	je connus.	do	connu.
do	couds, s, d. *pl. reg.*	do	je cousis.	do	cousu.
do	crains, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	je craignis.	do	craint.
do	crois, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	je crus.	do	cru.
do	croîs, croîs, croît, *pl. reg.*	do	je crûs.	do	crû.
do	dis, dis, dit, disons, dites, disent.	do	je dis.	do	dit.
not used.	il éclôt, ils éclosent	qu'il éclose, qu'ils éclosent.	*none.*	*none.*	éclos.
Regular.	écris, s, t. *pl. reg.*	*Regular.*	j'écrivis.	*Reg.*	écrit.
fasse, es, e, fassions, iez, ent.	fais, s, t, fesons, faites, font.	do	je fis.	do	fait.
none.	fris, s, t. *no pl.*	*none.*	*none.*	*none.*	frit.
Regular.	lis, lis, lit. *pl. reg.*	*Regular.*	je lus.	*Reg.*	lu.
do	luis, luis, luit. *pl. reg.*	do	*none.*	*none.*	lui.
do	maudis, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	je maudis.	*Reg.*	maudit.
do	mets, mets, met, *pl. reg.*	do	je mis.	do	mis.
do	mouds, ds, t. *pl. reg.*	do	je moulus,	do	moulu.
do	nais, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	je naquis.	do	né.
do	nuis, nuis, nuit. *pl. reg.*	do	je nuisis.	do	nui.

TABLEAU GENERAL, Etc.—
FOURTH

PRIMITIVE TENSE.		DERIVATIVE TENSES.		PRIM. TEN.	DERIV
INFINITIVE.		Future. Absolute.	Conditional Present.	Present Participle.	Imperf. Ind.
PAÎT RE,	*to graze.*	*Regular.*	*Regular.*	paiss ant.	*Regular.*
PLAI RE,	*to please.*	do	do	plais ant.	do
PREND RE,	*to take.*	do	do	pren ant.	do
REPAÎT RE,	*to feed.*	do	do	repaiss ant.	do
RÉSOUD RE,	*to resolve.*	do	do	resolv ant.	do
RI RE,	*to laugh.*	do	do	ri ant.	do
SUFFI RE,	*to be sufficient.*	do	do	suffis ant.	do
SUIV RE,	*to follow.*	do	do	suiv ant.	do
TRAI RE,	*to milk.*	do	do	tray ant.	do
VAINC RE,	*to conquer.*	do	do	vainqu ant.	do
VIV RE,	*to live.*	do	do	viv ant.	do

REMARKS ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION.

1. DISSOUDRE, to dissolve ; is like *absoudre.*

2. Instead of *attraire* which can only be used in the Infinitive, generally we use of *attirer,* same signification.

3. BATTRE has for compound :

abattre,	to pull down.	*rabattre,*	to abate.
combattre,	to fight.	*se débattre,*	to struggle.
débattre,	to debate.		

4. EXCLURE, to be excluded ; like *conclure.*

5. CONDUIRE has for compound :

construire,	to construct.	*introduire,*	to introduce.
déduire,	to deduct.	*produire,*	to produce.
		reconduire,	to reconduct.

(*Continué.*)

CONJUGATION.—(*Continued.*)

ATIVE TENSES.	PRIM. & DER. T.	DERIV. TENSE	PRIM. TEN	D. TEN	P. TEN.
Present Subjunctive.	Present Indicative.	Imperative.	Preterite Definite.	Imperf. Subj.	Past Particip.
Regular.	pais. s, t. *pl. reg.*	*Regular.*	*none.*	*none.*	pû.
do	plais, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	je plu s.	*Reg.*	plu.
prenne, es, e, prenions iez. ent.	prends, ds, d, prenons, ez, prennent.	do	je pri s.	do	pris.
Regular.	repais, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	repu s.	do	repû.
do	résous, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	je résolu s.	do	résous. *dissolved*
do	ris, ris, rit. *pl. reg.*	do	je ri s.	do	résolu, *resolved*
do	suffis, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	je suffi s.	do	suffi.
do	suis, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	je suivi s.	do	suivi.
do	trais, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	*none.*	*none.*	trait.
do	vaincs, s, c. *pl. reg.*	do	vainqui s.	*Reg.*	vaincu.
do	vis, s, t. *pl. reg.*	do	vécu s.	do	vécu.

détruire,	to destroy.	*réduire,*	to reduce.
instruire,	to instruct.	*traduire,*	to translate.
cuire,	to cook ; generally used with *faire.*		

CONNAITRE has *paraître,* to appear ; *reparaître,* to re-appear ; *disparaître,* to disappear ; *reconnaître,* to recognise, reconnoitre.

REM.—Verbs ending with *aître,* preserve the (^) over the *î,* when followed by the letter t.

6. COUDRE has for compound ; *recoudre,* to sew again ; *découdre,* to unstich.

7. CRAINDRE has :

peindre,	to paint.	*astreindre,*	to bind, to subject
éteindre,	to put out.	*atteindre,*	to reach.
feindre,	to feign.	*plaindre,*	to pity.
contraindre,	to constrain.	*se plaindre,*	to complain.

It must be remarked that verbs ending with *eindre*, *aindre*, or *soudre*, take *s*, *s*, *t* in the place of *ds*, *ds*, *d*; in the three persons singular of the Present Indicative.

8. Accroire, used only in the Infinitive, as : Faire accroire to make one believe what is not the case.

9. Croître has for compound : *décroître*, to decrease ; *accroître*, to increase.

Crû, Past Participle of *croître*, takes a circumflex accent in the masculine to distinguish it from *cru*, believed and *cru*, raw, not cooked. Some tenses and persons of *croître* and *croire*, are exactly alike, the (^) alone shows the difference.

10. Dire, to say, has *redire*, to say again ; but

contredire,	to contradict,	*médire*	to slander.
dédire,	to disown.	*prédire*,	to foretell.

interdire to interdict ; are just like *dire*, except that instead of *dites* in the second person plural of the Present Indicative and Imperative, they have the regular ending, *disez :* so we would have : *vous contredisez*, you contradict, etc, like the Present Participle, *contredisant*.

11. Écrire has the following like itself :

circonscrire,	to circumscribe.	*proscrire*,	to proscribe.
décrire,	to describe.	*récrire*,	to write again.
inscrire,	to inscribe.	*souscrire*,	to subscribe.
prescrire,	to prescribe.	*transcrire*,	to transcribe.

12. Faire has :

contrefaire,	to mimic.	*satisfaire*	to satisfy.
défaire	to undo.	*surfaire*,	to overcharge.
refaire,	to do again.		

13. Lire, has *élire*, to elect ; *relire*, to read again.

14. Mettre, has for compound :

admettre	to admit.	*permettre*,	to permit
commettre,	to commit.	*promettre*,	to promise.

compromettre,	to compromise.	*soumettre,*	to submit.
s'entremettre,	to intermeddle.	*transmettre.*	to transmit.
omettre,	to omit.	*remettre,*	to put off, or again.
se démettre,	to resign, to put out of joint.		

15. Moudre, has for compound :

Remoudre, to grind again, wheat, etc. ; *émoudre,* to grind knives, razors, etc. ; *rémoudre,* to grind again.

16. Renaître, to revive, to be born again ; has no Past Participle and therefore no compound tenses.

Naître is conjugated with *Etre ;* Ex. : *je suis né,* I was born.

17. Plaire has : *déplaire,* to displease ; *taire,* to hold silent ; *se taire,* to be silent.

Tû takes a circumflex accent in the masculine singular only, to distinguish it from *tu,* thou.

18. Prendre has :

apprendre,	to learn.	*entreprendre,*	to undertake.
comprendre,	to understand.	*se méprendre,*	to mistake.
désapprendre,	to unlearn.	*surprendre,*	to surprise.
reprendre,	to reprove, to take back.		

These verbs take (*nn*) when followed by *e, es, ent,* unaccented.

19. Resoudre has two Past Participles : *résolu, résous,* m., *résoute,* f. : *résous,* signifies dissolved ; *résolu,* resolved.

20. Rire has *sourire,* to smile.

21. Suivre has *poursuivre,* to pursue ; *s'ensuivre,* to be the consequence ; which is generally used unipersonally.

22. Traire has :

abstraire,	to abstract.	*rentraire,*	to darn.
distraire,	to distract.	*retraire,*	to redeem.
extraire,	to extract.	*soustraire,*	to substract.

23. Vaincre, has *convaincre,* to convince.

24. VIVRE has : *revivre,* to revive ; *survivre,* to survive.

REMARK.—Every one of these verbs, if the master thinks proper, should be written in full, so as to make the learner practice the rules for the formation of tenses, and give him an early knowledge of the irregularities of these verbs, which are generally neglected too much, even by those who are considered advanced pupils.

IRREGULAR PLACE OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

☞ We know that as a general rule the French require the personal pronouns used as regimens to precede their verbs ;—See page 63–4, 111, the following are an exception to the general rule :

25. *Aller,* to go ; *venir,* to come ; *courir, accourir,* to run to ; *penser, songer,* to think of ; *viser,* to aim at ; *être,* to belong ; and *reflective* verbs governing the dative and genetive.

EXAMPLES:

Je vais à lui,	I go to him.
Il vient à nous,	He comes to us.
Je vise à elle,	I aim at her.
Je songe à elle,	I think of her.
Ce livre est à nous,	That book is ours.
Je m'adresse à eux,	I apply to them.
Nous accourûmes or *courûmes à lui,*	We ran to him.

PARTICIPLES.

111. 1st. The Present Participle always ends with *ant ;* it never changes in its termination. Example : P. Pres.

Ces demoiselles charmant tout le monde par leur douceur et leur affabilité.

These young ladies charming every body by their gentleness and affability.

There are some adjectives that end with *ant,* and called for that reason verbal adjectives ; they may agree in gender and in number with the nouns they qualify.

Verb. adj. *Ces demoiselles charmantes et agréables se font aimer de tout le monde.*

These charming and amiable young ladies make themselves to be loved by every body.

2nd. Past Participles have different terminations, and agree like Adjectives; but no *Past Participle* conjugated with *Avoir* can in any circumstance whatever agree with the nominative of the verb. Again, if conjugated with *Etre* it will agree with the nominative of the verb, provided the verb is not a reflective one.

Des enfants gâtés, Spoiled children.

EXAMPLES with *Avoir* :

J'ai vu cette dame, I have seen that lady.
La dame que j'ai vue, The lady whom I have seen.

ETRE :

Elles sont arrivées, They have come.

REFLECTIVE.

Elles se sont amusées, They have enjoyed.
Ils se sont plu, They have pleased (to) each other.

ADVERBS.

☞ These adverbs should be committed to memory, yet without taxing the young learner too much with them; for it is more to give him an idea of all those little words which make *French reading* an insurmountable difficulty to the young student.

112. ADVERBS AND ADVERBIAL EXPRESSIONS OF TIME.

A jamais,	for ever.	*Jadis,*	formerly.
A l'avenir,	in future.	*Jamais,*	never.
A l'improviste,	unawares.	*Jusqu'à présent,* / *Jusqu'ici,*	until now.
A l'instant,	immediately.	*La veille,*	the eve.
Alors,	then, at that time.	*L'autre jour,*	the other day.
A présent,	now.	*Le lendemain,*	the next day.
Après-demain,	the day after to-morrow.	*Le surlendemain.*	the third day.
A tout jamais,	for ever.	*Longtemps,*	a long time.
Aujourd'hui,	to day.	*Lors,*	then.
Auparavant,	before.	*Maintenant,*	now.
Aussitôt,	immediately.		

ADVERBS AND ADVERBIAL EXPRESSIONS OF TIME.

Autrefois,	formerly.
Avant hier,	the day before yesterday.
Bien tard,	very late.
Bientôt,	soon.
Ça,	here.
Dans peu,	in a short time.
D'avance,	before hand.
De bonne heure,	early.
Déjà,	already.
Demain,	to-morrow.
De nouveau,	anew again.
Depuis longtemps,	since a long time.
Depuis peu,	since a short time.
De rechef,	over again.
Dernièrement,	lately.
Dès à présent,	from this time.
Dès demain,	from to-morrow.
Désormais,	hereafter.
De temps en temps,	from time to time.
Deux fois,	twice.
Dorénavant.	henceforth.
Enfin,	in short, at last.
Hier,	yesterday.
Incessamment,	shortly.
Incontinent,	incontinently.
Moins tôt,	not so soon.
Naguère or *r.*	ere while.
Nuitamment.	by night.
Parfois,	sometimes.
Pas encore,	not yet.
Plus souvent.	oftener.
Plus tôt,	sooner.
Présentement.	presently.
Quelquefois,	sometimes.
Rarement,	seldom.
Récemment.	recently.
Sans cesse,	incessingly.
Simultanément,	simultaneously.
Sitôt,	so soon.
Souvent,	often.
Sur le champ.	immediately.
Tantôt,	by and by.
Tard,	late.
Tôt ou tard,	soon or late.
Toujours,	always.
Tout de suite.	at once.
Très tard,	very late.
Trop tard,	too late.
Une fois,	once.
Vite.	quickly.

113. ADVERBS AND ADVERBIAL EXPRESSIONS OF PLACE OR SITUATION

A bas,	down.
A côté,	beside.
Ailleurs.	elsewhere.
Alentour,	around.
Arrière,	backward.
A terre,	down.
Auprès,	near.
Aux environs,	in the environs.
Bien loin.	very far.
Çà et là,	here and there.
Céans,	here within.
Ci,	here.
Deçà delà,	from here, from there.
De côté,	aside.
De près,	near.
D'en bas,	from below.
D'en haut,	from above.
Dessous,	under.
Dessus,	upon.
D'ici,	from here.
D'où,	from where.
En,	from then.
En arrière,	behind.
En bas,	below.
En deça,	on this side.
En dedans,	within.
En haut,	up stairs.
En dehors,	without.
Ici,	here.
Ici-bas.	here below.
Ici-dessus,	here above.
Ici-près,	near here.
Jusqu'ici,	as far as here.
Jusque là,	as far as there.
Jusqu'où,	how far.
Là,	then.
Là bas,	yonder.
Là dedans,	within.
Là-dessus,	there upon.
Là-haut,	up stairs.
Loin,	far.
Nulle part,	nowhere.
Où,	where.
Par delà,	on the other side.
Par en bas,	downward.
Par en haut,	upward.
Par ici,	this way.
Par là,	that way.
Par où,	through where.
Partout,	everywhere.
Près,	near.
Près d'ici,	near here.
Proche,	near.
Quelque part,	somewhere.
Tout auprès,	quite near.
Tout contre,	just by.
Tout du long,	all the way.
Tout le long,	all along.
Vis-à-vis,	opposite.
Y,	thither.

114. ADVERBS OF ORDER AND RANK.

A la file,	in a row.
A la fin,	in the end.
A la fois,	at once.
A la ronde,	around.
A l'avance,	before hand.
Alternativement,	alternatively.
Après,	after.
Auparavant,	before.
Avant,	before.
Ci-après,	hereafter.
Confusément,	confusedely.
D'abord,	at first.
De fond en comble,	from top to bottom.
De front,	in front.
De la même manière,	in the same way.
De rang,	in a row.
De suite,	one after another.
En dernier lieu,	in the last place.
Enfin,	at last.
En foule,	in a crowd.
En ordre,	in order.
En premier lieu,	in the first place,
Ensemble,	together.
Ensuite,	afterwards.
Pareillement,	likewise.
Par ordre,	in order.
Pêle-mêle,	helter-skelter.
Premièrement,	firstly.
Puis,	then.
Sens dessus dessous,	topsy-turvy.
Semblablement,	similarly.
Sans devant derrière,	the hind foremost.
Soudain,	suddenly.
Successivement,	successively.
Tout à rebours,	quite the wrong side out.
Tout,	quite.
Très,	very.

115. ADVERBS OF QUANTITY AND COMPARISON.

Abondamment.	in abondance,
Absolument,	absolutely.
Ainsi,	thus.
Assez,	enough.
Aussi,	as.
Autant,	asmuch, many.
Beaucoup,	much, many.
Bien,	much, many.
Combien,	how much, many.
Comme,	as.
Davantage,	more.
Encore,	again.
Entièrement,	altogether.
Environ,	about.
Exclusivement,	exclusively.
Extrêmement,	extremely.
Fort,	very.
Guère,	little, few.
Infiniment.	infinitely.
Médiocrement.	indifferently.
Mieux.	better.
Moins,	less.
Passablement,	indifferently.
Peu.	little.
Pis,	worse.
Plus,	more.
Plutôt,	rather.
Presque,	almost.
Quasi,	almost.
Que,	than.
Quelque,	about, however.
Si,	so.
Suffisamment,	sufficiently.
Tant,	so much, many.
Trop,	too much, many.

A bon marché,	cheap.
A demi,	by half.
A foison,	plentifully.
A l'envi,	in emulation.
A l'infini,	infinitely.
A peu de chose près,	very near.
A peu près,	nearly.
A qui mieux mieux,	in emulation.
Au moins,	at least.
Au plus,	at most.
A vil prix,	at a low price.
De même,	likewise.
De mieux en mieux,	better and better.
De plus,	moreover.
Du moins,	at least.
Du tout,	not at all.
Ni moins,	neither less.
Ni plus,	neither more.
Pas beaucoup,	not much.
Peu à peu,	little by little.
Pour le moins,	for the least.
Pour le plus,	for the most,
Tant soit peu,	ever so little.
Trop peu,	too little.
Tout à fait,	quite.
Tout au plus,	at most.
Un peu,	a little.

116. ADVERBS OF MANNER AND QUALITY.

A la mode,	in the fashion.	*De biais,*	aslant.
A la hâte,	in haste.	*Ensemble,*	together.
A regret,	regretfully.	*Exprès,*	on purpose.
A tort,	wrongfully.	*Gratis,*	gratis.
A travers,	through.	*Incognito,* (*g* soft),	incognito.
Autrement,	otherwise.	*Instamment,*	instantly.
Avec soin,	with care.	*Lentement,*	slowly.
Bien,	well.	*Même,*	even
Conjointement,	conjointly.	*Pêle-mêle,*	helter-skelter.
Constamment,	constantly.	*Tellement,*	so much.

117. ADVERBS OF AFFIRMATION.

Certes,	of course.	*Soit,*	be it so.
D'accord,	agreed.	*Volontiers,*	willingly.
Oui,	yes.	*Vraiment,*	truly.
Sans doute.	undoubtedly.		

118. ADVERBS OF NEGATION.

Ne pas,	not.	*Nullement,*	not at all.
Ne point,	not at all.	*Point du tout.*	not at all.
Non,	no.		

119. ADVERBS OF DOUBT.

Peut-être,	perhaps.	*Toutefois,*	however.
		Cependant,	however.

120. ADVERBS OF INTERROGATION.

Combien,	how much, many.	*Par où,*	what way.
Comment,	how.	*Pourquoi,*	why.
D'où,	from where.	*Quand,*	when.
Où,	where.		

FORMATION OF ADVERBS.

121. When a masculine Adjective ends with a vowel, *ment* is added to it; as: *aisé*, easy, *aisément; poli*, polite, *poliment;* except *impuni*, with impunity; which makes *impunément;* and *beau*, fine; *nouveau*, new; *mou*, soft; the adverbs of which are formed from the feminine by adding *ment* to it, as: *beau, bellement*, finely; *fou, follement*, foolishly.

2nd. If the masculine adjective ends with *e* mute, then *ment* is simply added to; as: *horrible, horriblement*, etc., except:

aveugle,	blind,	*aveuglément,*
commode,	handy,	*commodément,*

opiniâtre,	obstinate,	*opiniâtrément,*
uniforme,	uniform,	*uniformément;*

which have the *e* mute accented.

Traître, treacherous ; makes *traîtreusement.*

3rd. If the adjective in the masculine ends with a consonant, the adverb must be formed from the feminine by adding *ment* to it ; *bon, bonne,* good ; *bonnement ; haut, haute,* high ; *hautement ;* except *gentil,* gentil, which makes *gentiment ;* and the following :

commun,	common,	*communément,*
confuse,	confused,	*confusément,*
précis,	precise,	*précisément.*
profond,	profound,	*profondément,*

which change the *e* mute of the feminine into an (*é*) accented for the adverb.

4th. Adjectives ending with *ant* or *ent* form their adverbs by changing *ant* or *ent* into *amment, emment,* as :

négligent,	negligent,	*négligemment,*
obligeant,	obliging,	*obligeamment,*

except : *lent,* slow ; *présent,* present ; *véhément,* vehement ; the adverbs of which are ; *lentement, présentement, véhémentement ;* and these : *nuitamment,* by night; *notamment,* with notice ; *sciemment,* willingly ; which are formed from adjectives not in use now.

PREPOSITIONS.

122. Prepositions which can only be followed by a substantive, a Pronoun or an Infinitive, are :

à,	to, at.	*pour,*	for.
de,	of, from.	*par,*	by.
après,	after.	*sans,*	without.
entre,	between, among.	*voici,*	here is, here are.
sans voir,	without seeing.	*pour moi,*	for me.

123. Those that can only be followed by Subst. or Pron. :

avec,	with.	*envers*	towards (concerning per-
chez,	at the house of.	*selon,*	according to. [sons.
depuis,	since.	*parmi,*	among.
vers,	towards, (direction.)	*malgré,*	in spite of.
sur,	upon.	*outre,*	besides.
suivant,	according to.	*derrière,*	behind.
pendant,	during.	*hormis,*	except.
dès,	since, from.	*par delà,*	on the other side.
contre,	against.	*par dessus,*	above.
dans,	in.	*par-devant,*	in front.
sous,	under.	*par-derrière,*	from behind.

par devers, before, (at law.)
devers, near, (in the neighborhood of) ; and

durant,	during.	*touchant,*	touching.
joignant,	adjoining.	*concernant,*	concerning.
nonobstant,	notwithstanding.	*vu,*	as, since, considering.
moyennant,	by means of.	*attendu,*	Id.

Example : *Depuis son retour.* *Depuis lui jusqu'à eux.*
Since his return. From him to them.

124. Prepositions that can be followed by a Substantive, another Preposition with a Substantive or an Infinitive are : *près* near ; *hormis,* except ; *hors,* out of ; *excepté,* except.

Example : *Près Paris,* Near Paris.
Près de Paris, Near Paris.
Près de sortir, Near going out.

125. Prepositions that can be followed by a Substantive, another Preposition followed only by an Infinitive : *avant*, before ; *sauf*, except. Example : *Avant de sortir*, before going out.

126. Prepositions or prepositive expressions which always require after them the Preposition (*de*) and a Substantive ; such as :

auprès,	near.	*au-dehors*,	without.
au-delà,	on the other side.	*au-dedans*,	within.
au-dessous,	under.	*autour*,	around.
au-dessus,	above.	*au-devant*,	before ; and all

such expressions composed of the Preposition *à* and a Substantive.

Ils allèrent au-devant du Roi,
They went to meet the King.

127. Prepositive expressions whose Prepositions which accompany them, can be followed by a Substantive or an Infinitive :

loin,	far	*à moins*,	unless.
faute,	for want.	*auprès*,	near.
à force,	by dint.		

Faute de pâturage, For want of pasture.
Faute de le faire, For want of doing it.

IMPORTANT REMARK.—The Prepositions which govern verbs, govern them in the Infinitive ; the only exception is *en* which requires the Present Participle. *a*, *de*, *en*, are always repeated where they have to be used.

CONJUNCTIONS.

et,	and.	*comme*,	as.
ni,	neither.	*lorsque*,	when, at that time.
ou,	or.	*mais*,	but.
que,	that, than.	*pourquoi*,	why.
si,	if.	*puisque*,	since.
or,	now.	*quand*,	when.
donc,	then.	*quoique*,	although.
car,	for, because.	*parce que*,	because.
toutefois,	however.		

Si, is an adverb, when meaning *yes*, or *so*.

The other conjunctions are such as are composed of one or several words followed by the conjunction *que*.

INTERJECTIONS.

128. The interjections which express admiration, astonishment, are :

ah !	ah !	*euh !*	lackaday !
ha !	ha !	*eh !*	ha !
oh !	oh !	*hé !*	ha !
ho !	ho !	*ha, ah !*	ah, ah !
ô !	o !	*oh !*	oh !
heu !	lackaday !	*ho !*	ho !
tarare !	fiddlestick.		

129. Those expressing pain, affliction, are :

ah !	ha !	*aïe !*	oh !
oh !	oh !	*ahi !*	oh !
eh !	ho !	*hélas !*	alas !
ouf !	oh !	*holà !*	stop !

130. Of derision, distrust, irony :

oui-dà !	yes, indeed !	*hum !*	hum !
ah !	ah !	*hom !*	hom !
ouais !	bless me !		

131. Of aversion, contempt :

fi !	pshaw !	*bah !*	bah !
fi donc !	for shame !	*baste !*	nonsense !
pouah !	pshaw !	*hou !*	hoo !
zest !	fiddlestick !		

132. For calling, questioning, sounding :

hé !	eh !	*holà !*	stop !
hé bien !	well !	*oh là !*	at there !
hem !	hem !	*heim !*	heim !
hein !	hein !	*st !*	st !
ho !	oh !		

133. To impose silence :

chut !	silence !	*st !*	st !	*paix !*	silence !

134. Of encouragement or otherwise:

tout beau !	how, ho !	*bon !*	good !
allons !	come !	*courage !*	courage !
morbleu !	zounds !	*ferme !*	stand !
miséricorde !	mercy !	*plaît-il !*	if you please !
Dieu !	God !	*ciel !*	heavens !
peste !	plague !	*so !*	come !
çà !	come ! now !		

[END OF THE SECOND PART.]

TROISIEME PARTIE.

LECTURE.

☞ The four following remarks should

(1.) For the sound of each vowel see page ix—*a, e, i, o, u, y,*

(2.) For the *diphthongs au, eau, ai, ei, oi, oy, eu, œu;*

(3.) Generally speaking, *consonants* at the end of French

(4.) *e, es,* (mute) terminations of words, are silent, unless the also silent.

CONTE MORAL, INS

JEANNOT ET COLIN.

1. Plusieurs personnes dignes de foi *ont* vu Jeannot et Colin, dans la ville d'Issoire, en Auvergne, ville fameuse dans tout l'univers par son collége et par ses chaudrons.

2. Jeannot *était* fils d'un marchand de mulets ; Colin *devait* le jour à un brave laboureur des environs.

3. Jeannot et Colin *étaient* fort jolis pour des Auvergnats ; ils s'*aimaient* beaucoup et *étaient* tous les deux dans la même école.

4. Le temps de leurs études *était* sur le point de *finir,* quand un tailleur *apporta* à Jeannot un habit de velours, avec une veste de Lyon de fort bon goût ; le tout *était* accompagné d'une lettre de Monsieur de la Jeannotière.

5. Colin *admira* l'habit et ne *fut* point jaloux ; mais Jeannot *prit* un air de supériorité qui *affligea* Colin.

6. Dès ce moment Jeannot n'*étudia* plus, se *regarda* au miroir et *méprisa* tout le monde.

THIRD PART.

READING.

always be consulted when reading.

—which sound should never be departed from.
see page xi.
words, should not be pronounced. See page xii.
word has but one syllable, as : *de, des ;—ent,* 2d pl. in verbs is

TRUCTIF ET AMUSANT.

JEANNOT AND COLIN.

Many persons worthy of belief have seen Jeannot and Colin in the town of Issoire, in Auvergne, a town famous in the whole universe for its college and its cauldrons.

2. Jeannot was the son of a dealer in mules ; Colin owed his life to an honest farmer of the environs.

3. Jeannot and Colin were very pretty for Auvergnais ; they were very fond of each other, and both were at the same school.

4. The time of their studies was on the point of drawing to a close, when a tailor brought to Jeannot a velvet coat, with a very tasteful Lyons vest ; the whole were accompanied by a letter from Monsieur de la Jeannotière.

5. Colin admired the coat and was not at all jealous ; but Jeannot assumed an air of superiority which grieved Colin.

6. From that time Jeannot ceased to study ; he looked at himself in the glass and despised every body.

7. Quelque temps après un valet de chambre *arriva* en poste et *apporta* une seconde lettre à Monsieur le marquis de la Jeannotière ; c'*était* un ordre de Monsieur son père de *faire venir* Monsieur son fils à Paris.

8. Jeannot *monta* en chaise en *tendant* la main à Colin, avec un sourire de protection assez noble.

9. Colin *sentit* son néant, et *pleura*. Jeannot *partit* dans toute la pompe de sa gloire.

10. Colin toujours le même, *écrivit* une lettre de compliments à son ancien camarade, pour le *congratuler*. Le petit marquis ne lui *fit* point de réponse ; Colin en *fut* malade de douleur.

11. Le père et la mère *donnèrent* d'abord un gouverneur au jeune marquis ; ce gouverneur qui *était* un homme du bel air, et qui ne *savait* rien, ne *put* rien *enseigner* à son pupille.

12. Monsieur, *voulait* que son fils *apprît* le latin, madame ne le *voulait* pas. Ils *prirent* pour arbitre un auteur qui *était* célèbre par des ouvrages agréables.

13. Il *fut* prié à *dîner*. Le maître de la maison *commença* par lui *dire* : Monsieur, comme vous *savez* le latin, et que vous *êtes* un homme de la cour—

14. Moi, monsieur, du latin ? Je n'en *sais* pas un mot, *répondit* le bel-esprit : Il est clair qu'on *parle* beaucoup mieux sa langue, quand on ne *partage* pas son application entre elle et les langues étrangères.

15. *Voyez* toutes nos dames, elles *ont* l'esprit plus agréable que les hommes ; leurs lettres *sont* écrites avec cent fois plus de grâce ; elles n'*ont* de supériorité sur nous que parce qu'elles ne *savent* pas le latin.

16. Eh bien ! n'*avais*-je pas raison ? dit madame, je *veux* que mon fils *soit* un homme d'esprit, qu'il *réussisse* dans le monde ; et vous *voyez* que s'il *savait* le latin il *serait* perdu.—*Joue*-t-on—s'il vous *plaît* la comédie en latin ? *Plaide*-t-on en latin quand on *a* un procès ?

7. Sometime after this, a servant arrived in a post chaise, and brought a second letter to Monsieur the marquis de la Jeannotière ; it was an order from Monsieur, his father, to bring his son to Paris.

8. Jeannot got into the chaise, holding out his hand to Colin with a patronising smile.

9. Colin felt his insignificance, and wept. Jeannot left in all the pomp of his glory.

10. Colin, always the same, wrote a complimentary letter to his former comrade, to congratulate him. The little marquis did not give him an answer ; whereupon Colin became sick with sorrow.

11. The father and mother immediately provided a tutor for the young marquis ; that tutor, who was a fashionable man, and who knew nothing, could not teach anything to his pupil.

12. Monsieur wished that his son should learn Latin ; Madame did not wish it. They took for arbiter, one who was celebrated as the author of some pleasant works.

13. He was invited to dinner. The master of the house began to say to him : Sir, as you know Latin, and as you are a man of the court—

14. I, sir, Latin ? I don't know a word of it, replied the wit. It is evident that one speaks his own language much better, when he does not divide his attention between it and foreign languages.

15. See all our ladies, they possess a more agreeable wit than men ; their letters are written with a hundred times more elegance. They have a superiority over us just because they don't know Latin.

16. Well ! was I not right ? said Madame. I wish my son to be a man of wit,—that he may succeed in the world ; and you see if he knew Latin he would be ruined. Do people, I pray you, play comedy in Latin ? Do they plead in Latin when they have a law suit.

17. Monsieur, *ébloui* de ces raisons, *passa* condamnation, et il *fut* conclu que le jeune marquis ne *perdrait* pas son temps à *connaître* les auteurs classiques ou étrangers.

18. Mais qu'*apprendra*-t-il donc ? car il *faut* encore qu'il *sache* quelque chose ; ne *pourrait*-on pas lui *montrer* un peu de géographie ? A quoi cela lui *servira*-t-il ? *répondit* le gouverneur.

19. Quand Monsieur le marquis *ira* dans ses terres, les postillons ne *sauront*-ils pas les chemins ?

20. Vous *avez* raison, *répondit* le père ; mais j'*ai entendu parler* d'une belle science qu'on *appelle*, je *crois*, l'astronomie. Quelle pitié ! *repartit* le gouverneur ; se *conduit*-on par les astres dans ce monde ?

21. *Faudra*-t-il que monsieur le marquis se *tue* à *calculer* une éclipse, quand il la *trouve* dans l'almanach, qui lui *enseigne* l'âge de la lune et celui de toutes les princesses de l'Europe ?

22. Madame *fut* entièrement de l'avis du gouverneur.—Le petit marquis *était* au comble de la joie ; le père *était* très-*indécis*.

23. Que *faudra*-t-il donc *apprendre* à mon fils ? *disait*-il : à *être* aimable, *répondit* l'ami que l'on *consultait*, et s'il *sait* les moyens de *plaire*, il *saura* tout ; c'*est* ce qu'il *pourra apprendre* sans se *donner* la moindre peine.

24. On *voit* bien monsieur que vous *êtes* l'homme du monde le plus savant, *interrompit* madame; mon fils vous *devra* toute son éducation.

25. Je m'*imagine* pourtant qu'il ne *serait* pas mal qu'il *sût* un peu d'histoire. Hélas, madame, à quoi cela *est*-il bon ? Qu'importe à monsieur votre fils que Charlemagne *ait* régné, et que son arrière petit-fils, Louis II *ait été* bègue.

26. Rien n'*est* mieux *dit !* s'*écria* le gouverneur : on *étouffe* l'esprit des enfants sous un amas de connaissances inutiles ; mais de toutes les sciences, la plus absurde c'*est* la géométrie.

27. Cette science ridicule *a* pour objet des surfaces, des lignes et de points, qui n'*existent* pas dans la nature.

17. Monsieur, dazzled by these reasons, gave his decision, and it was agreed that the young marquis should not lose his time in studying classical or foreign authors.

18. But what shall he learn, then? for he must know some thing. Could you not teach him a little Geography? What use will it be to him? retorted the tutor.

19. When Monsieur the marquis visits his estates, will not the the postillons know the roads?

20. You are right, replied the father; but I have heard of a beautiful science which people call, I believe, Astronomy. What folly? answered the tutor; do people conduct themselves by the stars in this world?

21. Shall Monsieur the marquis weary himself in calculating an eclipse, when he can find it in the almanack, which teaches him the age of the moon, and that of all the Princesses of Europe.

22. Madame was altogether of the opinion of the tutor. The little marquis was in the highest spirits; the father was very doubtful.

23. What, then, must my son be taught? said he. To be agreeable responded the friend whom they consulted; and if he knows the means of pleasing, he will know every thing; that he can learn without giving himself the least trouble.

24. One sees well, sir, that you are the most learned man, in the world, interrupted the mother, and my son will owe all his education to you.

25. I fancy, however, that it would not be bad if he knew a little History. Alas! Madam, of what use is that? What matters it to your son if Charlemange did reign, or if his great grandson, Louis II., was a stammerer.

26. Nothing is more to the point! exclaimed the tutor; people smother the intellect of children under a heap of useless knowledge; but of all the sciences, the most absurd is Geometry.

27. That ridiculous science has for its object, surfaces, lines and points which do not exist in nature.

28. Monsieur et madame n'*entendaient* pas trop ce que le gouverneur *voulait dire*, mais ils *furent* entièrement de son avis.

29. Enfin, après *avoir* examiné le fort et le faible des sciences il *fut* décidé que monsieur le marquis *apprendrait* à *danser*.

30. Madame la marquise *donna* à *souper* aux beaux esprits de Paris. La tête du jeune homme *fut* bientôt renversée ; il *acquit* l'art de *parler* sans s'*entendre*, et se *perfectionna* dans l'art de n'*être* propre à rien.

31. Quand son père le *vit* si éloquent, il *regretta* vivement de ne lui *avoir* pas fait *apprendre* le latin, car il lui *aurait* acheté une charge dans la robe. La mère, qui *avait* des sentiments plus nobles, se *chargea* de *solliciter* un régiment pour son fils.

32. En attendant il *dépensa* beaucoup pendant que ses parents s'*épuisaient* davantage à vivre en grands seigneurs.

33. Une jeune veuve de qualité, leur voisine, qui n'*avait* qu'une fortune médiocre, *voulut* bien se *résoudre* à *mettre* en sûreté les grands biens de monsieur et de madame la Jeannotière en se les appropriant, et en épousant le jeune marquis.

34. Une vieille voisine *proposa* le mariage ; les parents éblouis de la splendeur de cette alliance, *acceptèrent* avec joie la proposition. Le jeune homme *allait épouser* une femme qu'il *adorait* et dont il *était* aimé ; les amis de la maison l'en *félicitaient* ; on *allait rédiger* les articles.

35. Un matin qu'il *était* aux pieds de la charmante épouse, *arrive* tout effaré, un valet de chambre de madame : Voici bien d'autres nouvelles, *dit*-il ; des huissiers *déménagent* la maison de monsieur et de madame ; tout *est* saisi par les créanciers.

36. *Voyons* un peu, dit le marquis, ce que c'*est* que ça,—Oui, dit la veuve, *allez punir* ces coquins-là, *allez* vite. Il y *court*, il *arrive* à la maison ; son père *était* déjà emprisonné. Sa mère *était* seule, sans secours, noyée dans les larmes ; il ne lui *restait*

28. Monsieur and Madame did not entirely comprehend what the tutor meant; but they were altogether of his opinion.

29. At last, after having examined the arguments for and against the sciences, it was decided that Monsieur the marquis would learn to dance.

30. Madame the marchioness gave suppers to the wits of Paris. The head of the young man was soon turned. He acquired the art of speaking without understanding himself, and perfected himself in the art of being fit for nothing.

31. When his father saw him so eloquent, he regretted much not having made him learn Latin, for he should have purchased for him admission to the Bar. The mother who had grander ideas, undertook to solicit a regiment for her son.

32. In the meantime he spent his money extravagantly, while his parents squandered still more in living like great people.

33. A young widow of rank, their neighbor, who had only a moderate fortune, was willing to condescend to place in safety the great wealth of Monsieur and Madame de la Jeannotière, by appropriating it to herself and marrying the young marquis.

34. An old neighbor proposed the marriage; the parents dazzled by the splendor of that alliance, accepted the proposition with joy. The young man was going to marry a woman whom he adored and by whom he was loved, the friends of the house congratulated him about it; they were about to draw up the articles.

35. One morning as he was at the feet of his charming betrothed a servant of his mother came in all scared: I bring you unexpected news, exclaimed he; some bailiffs are clearing the house of your father and mother; every thing has been seized by the creditors.

36. Come let us see, said the marquis, what this is. Yes, said the widow, go and punish the scoundrels, go quick. He ran thither, he arrived at the house; his father was already in goal. His mother was alone, without help, bathed in tears; there

que le souvenir de sa fortune, de sa beauté, de ses fautes, et de ses folles dépenses.

37. Après que le fils *eut* longtemps pleuré avec la mère, il lui *dit* enfin : ne nous *désespérons* pas ; cette jeune veuve m'*aime* éperdument ; elle *est* généreuse plus que riche, je *réponds* d'elle.

38. Il *retourne* chez elle : Quoi ! c'*est* vous monsieur de la Jeannotière ; que *venez*-vous *faire* ici ? *abandonne*-t-on ainsi sa mère ! *allez* chez cette pauvre femme, *dites*-lui que j'*ai* besoin d'une femme de chambre, et que je lui *donnerai* la préférence.

39. Le marquis *fut* près de s'*évanouir* ; il *fut* traité à peu près de même par tous ses amis, et *apprit* mieux à *connaître* le monde dans une demi-journée que dans tout le reste de sa vie.

40. Comme il *était* plongé dans la douleur, il *vit avancer* une chaise roulante, à l'antique, espèce de tombereau couvert, suivi de quatre charrettes énormes, toutes chargées. Il y *avait* dans la chaise un jeune homme grossièrement vêtu ; sa petite femme brune *était* cahotée à côté de lui.

41. La voiture n'*allait* pas comme le char d'un petit maître : le voyageur *eut* tout le temps de *contempler* le marquis immobile, abîmé dans sa douleur,—Ah ! mon Dieu, s'*écria*-t-il, je *crois* que c'*est* là Jeannot ; à ce nom le marquis *lève* les yeux, la voiture s'*arrête*.

42. Le petit homme ne *fait* qu'un saut, et *court embrasser* son ancien camarade : Tu m'*as* abandonné, dit Colin ; mais tu *as* beau *être* grand seigneur, je t'*aimerai* toujours. Jeannot, confus et attendri, lui *conta* en sanglotant, une partie de son histoire.

43. Ils *ront* tous trois à pied, suivis du bagage : Qu'*est*-ce donc que tout cet attirail, vous *appartient*-il ?—Oui tout *est* à moi et à ma femme. Je *suis* à la tête d'une bonne manufacture de fer étamé et de cuivre.

44. J'*ai* épousé la fille d'un riche négociant en ustensiles nécessaires aux grands et aux petits ; nous *travaillons* beaucoup ;

remained to her nothing but the remembrance of her fortune, beauty, faults, and foolish extravagance.

37. After the son had wept long enough with his mother, he said to her at last : Let us not despair ; that young widow is passionately fond of me ; she is even more generous than rich, I answer for her.

38. He returned to her house : What ! Is that you Monsieur de la Jeannotière ? what do you come here for ? do you thus abandon your mother ? Go to that poor woman, tell her that I have need of a chamber maid, and that I will give her the preference.

39. The marquis was near fainting. He was treated in much the same way by all his friends, and learned to know better what the world is, in half a day than in all the rest of his life.

40. As he was plunged in grief, he saw advancing an antique chaise, a species of covered waggon, followed by four stupendous carts all loaded. There was in the chaise a young man coarsely clad ; his little brunette wife was jolted by his side.

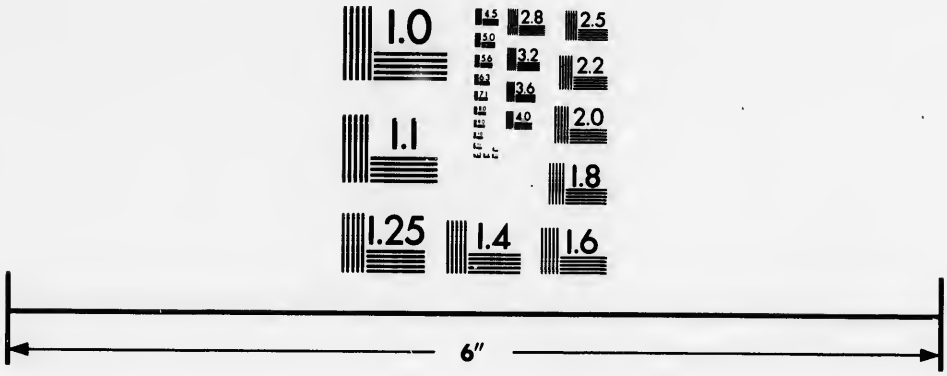
41. The carriage did not speed like the chariot of a fop ; the traveller had plenty of time to contemplate the marquis, motionless and sunk in grief. Ah ! good gracious cried he, I think that is Jeannot. At that name the marquis raised his eyes ; the carriage stopped.

42. The little man made but one leap and ran to embrace his former companion : Thou hast abandoned me, said Colin ; but though thou be a great seigneur, I will always love thee. Jeannot confused and moved, related to him, sobbing, a part of his history.

43. They all three went on foot, followed by the luggage. What is all that equipage ? Does it belong to you ? Yes, all is mine and my wife's. I am at the head of a profitable tin and copper manufactory.

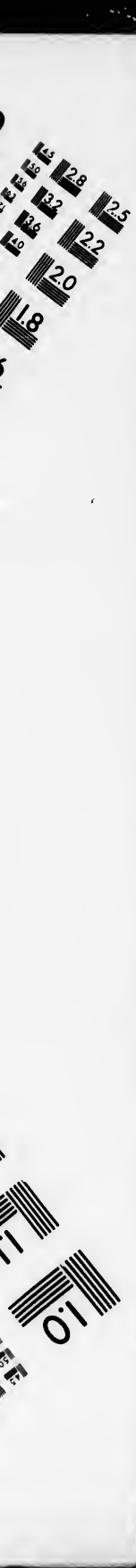
44. I have married the daughter of a rich dealer in utensils useful to the great and small ; we work much ; God blesses us ;

IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503


2.8
2.5
3.2
3.6
2.2
4.0
2.0
1.8
1.1
1.0

Dieu nous *bénit ;* nous n'*avons* point changé d'état, nous *sommes* heureux, nous *aiderons* notre ami Jeannot.

45. Ne *sois* plus marquis ; toutes les grandeurs de ce monde ne *valent* pas un bon ami. Tu *reviendras* au pays avec moi, je t'*apprendrai* le métier ; je te *mettrai* de part, et nous *vivrons* gaiement où nous *sommes* nés.

46. Jeannot tout confus se *sentait* partagé entre la douleur et la joie, la tendresse et la honte ; il se *disait* tout bas : Tous mes amis du bel air m'*ont* trahi, et Colin que j'*ai* méprisé *vient* seul à mon secours.

47. Il *sentit* qu'il ne *pourrait abandonner* son père et sa mère, le monde n'*avait* pas encore étouffé le germe de son bon naturel.

48. Nous *aurons* soin de ta mère, dit Colin ; et quant à ton père, qui *est* en prison, j'*entends* un peu les affaires ; ses créanciers voyant qu'il n'*a* plus rien, s'*accommoderont* pour peu de chose,—je me *charge* de tout.

49. Colin *fit* tant qu'il *tira* le père de prison. Jeannot *retourna* dans sa patrie avec ses parents, qui *reprirent* leur première profession. Il *épousa* une sœur de Colin.—Et Jeannot le père, Jeannotte la mère, et Jeannot le fils, *virent* que le bonheur n'*est* pas dans la vanité.

SOURD COMME UN POT.

50. Vers les cinq heures du soir en hiver, un cavalier s'*arrêta* à une hôtellerie qui *était* pleine de voyageurs.

51. Il *entra* à cheval dans la cour, et appelant l'aubergiste de toutes ses forces : *tenez, dit*-il, *ayez* soin de mon cheval et le *menez* à l'écurie.

52. Nous n'*avons* pas de place, dit l'aubergiste, l'écurie *est* pleine. Oui, oui, *répliqua* le monsieur, faisant semblant de ne pas entendre, je *penserai* à vous demain.—Mais je vous *répète* qu'il n'y *a* pas de place.—*Donnez*-lui de l'avoine, et autant de foin qu'il en *pourra manger*, dit le voyageur ; et laissant son cheval, il se *dirigea* aussitôt vers la maison.

We have not changed our station, we are happy, we will aid our friend Jeannot.

45. Be no longer a marquis, all the pomp of this world is not worth a good friend. You shall return home with me, I will teach you a trade ; I will take you into partnership, and we will live happy where we were born.

46. Jeannot confused, felt divided between sorrow and joy, love and shame. He said to himself : All my fashionable friends have betrayed me, and Colin, whom I have despised, alone comes to my help.

47. He felt he could not forsake his father and mother ; the world had not yet stifled the germ of his better nature.

48. We will take care of your mother, said Colin, and as to your father, who is in prison, I understand business ; his creditors seeing that he has nothing more, will readily come to terms ; I shall manage it all myself.

49. Colin succeeded so well that he got the father out of prison. Jeannot returned to his birthplace with his parents, who resumed their former condition. He married a sister of Colin ; and Jeannot the father, Jeannotte the mother, and Jeannot the son understood at last that happiness does not consist in vanity.

DEAF AS A POST.

50. About five o'clock, one winter's evening, a gentleman on horseback, stopped at an inn which was full of travellers.

51. He rode into the yard, and, calling the ostler very loud, said : there, take care of my horse and put him in the stable.

52. We have no room, said the ostler, the stable is full. Yes, yes, replied the gentleman, seeming not to hear, I will think of you to-morrow morning. But I tell you, there is no room. Ay, ay, give him oats, and as much hay as he will eat, said the traveller ; and leaving his horse, he made his way into the house.

53. Il *faut* qu'il *soit* fou dit l'aubergiste. Je *crois* qu'il *est* sourd dit le garçon d'écurie ; en tous cas il *faut avoir* soin de son cheval, nous en *serions* responsables.

54. Notre voyageur *entra* donc dans la maison, et la femme de l'aubergiste lui *répéta* ce que son mari lui *avait* déjà dit, qu'il *était* impossible de le *loger*.

55. Il lui *cria* à l'*étourdir*, pas de compliments, pas de cérémonies, je vous *prie*, madame, vos logements *seront* assez bons. Je ne *suis* pas difficile ; vous n'*avez* que *faire* de *parler*, je *suis* si sourd que je n'*entendrais* pas un canon.

56. Alors il *prit* une chaise et se *mit* auprès du feu, comme s'il *eût* été chez lui.

57. Voyant qu'il n'y *avait* pas moyen de se *débarrasser* de lui, l'aubergiste et sa femme *consentirent* enfin à lui *laisser passer* la nuit sur une chaise, vu que tous les lits *étaient* occupés.

58. Peu de temps après il *passa* dans la chambre d'à côté, et voyant le dîner servi, il se *mit* à table. On *eut* beau lui *crier* dans les oreilles, que c'*était* un dîner d'amis, et que ces messieurs ne *recevaient* pas d'étranger : il *parut comprendre* qu'on *voulait* le *faire placer* au haut de la table, et remerciant les convives de leur politesse, *répondit* qu'il se *trouvait* très-bien où il *était*.

59. Comme il n'y *avait* pas moyen de lui rien *faire entendre*, on le *laissa* tranquille. Après *avoir* fait un excellent dîner, il *jeta* une pièce de deux francs sur la table pour son repas ; mais la femme de l'aubergiste la *repoussa* avec dédain, en disant : Quoi ! Est-ce que vous *pensez* que deux francs *vont payer* un dîner comme le vôtre.

60. Oh ! je vous *demande* pardon madame, *répliqua*-t-il, je *veux* absolument *payer* mon dîner ; je *remercie* ces messieurs de leur politesse, mais je ne *souffrirai* pas qu'ils *paient* pour moi.

61. Alors regardant à sa montre, il *sortit* de la salle, *souhaita* une bonne nuit à tout le monde, et s'en *alla* droit à une chambre-à-coucher.

53. He must be a fool, said the ostler. I think he is deaf, replied a stable boy; but at all events, we must take care of his horse, we shall be responsible for it.

54. Our traveller now entered the house, and the landlady told him as the other had done, that it was impossible to lodge him.

55. He cried loud enough to stun her: No compliments, no ceremony, I beg, Ma'am; your accommodations will be very good; I am easily satisfied, and it is quite useless for you to speak, for I am so deaf that I cannot hear a cannon.

56. He then took a chair and seated himself by the fire, as if he had been at home. Finding no means of getting rid of him, the landlord and his wife determined to let him pass the night on the chair, as the beds were all engaged.

57. Shortly after, passing through the next room, he saw the dinner served, and immediately taking a chair, he placed himself at the table; it was in vain they bawled to him as loud as possible, that it was a private party, and that they would not receive a stranger; he appeared to think that they wished to give him the top of the table, and thanking them for their politeness he said he was very comfortable where he was seated.

58. Finding they could not make him understand, they let him remain; and after eating a hearty dinner, he threw a two franc piece on the table to pay for his repast; but the landlady pushed it away with disdain, saying: what! do you suppose that two francs will pay for such a dinner as you have eaten.

59. Oh! I beg your pardon, Ma'am, replied he, I insist on paying for my own dinner; I thank these gentlemen for their politeness, but I will not suffer them to pay for me.

60. Then looking at his watch, he went out of the room, wishing them all good night, and soon found his way to a bed room.

61. The company after having laughed heartily at his apparent stupidity, sent a servant to see where he was gone.

62. Après s'*être* bien moqués de sa prétendue stupidité, les voyageurs *envoyèrent* une domestique pour *voir* où il *était* allé.

63. Elle *revint* bientôt en disant qu'il *avait* pris possession d'une de leurs chambres. Ils *convinrent* donc tous, d'*aller* ensemble l'en *faire sortir* par force ; mais quand ils *furent* près de la porte ils l'*entendirent* se *barricader* avec les meubles, et dire, se parlant à lui-même :

64. Que je *suis* malheureux ! n'importe qui *pourrait enfoncer* ma porte sans que je *pusse* l'*entendre* ; ces messieurs *sont* peut-être honnêtes ou ne le *sont* pas ; et comme j'*ai* de l'argent, je ne *veux* pas *courir* risque de le *perdre*.

65. Non, je ne me *coucherai* pas, ni je n'*éteindrai* ma chandelle ; je *veillerai* toute la nuit avec mes pistolets armés, et si quelqu'un *fait* mine d'*entrer*, je *tirerai* sur lui.

66. Après *avoir* entendu cela ils ne *pensèrent* plus à le *déloger* ; il se *coucha* et *passa* la nuit fort tranquillement, laissant le monsieur, qui *avait* pris le lit, en *chercher* un autre ailleurs.

67. Le lendemain matin, il *descendit*, *alla chercher* son cheval à l'écurie, et le *conduisit* à la porte ; les voyageurs s'*étaient* déjà rassemblés pour se *moquer* encore de lui.

68. Aussitôt qu'il *fut* monté à cheval, il *jeta* au garçon trente sous pour son cheval et sa chambre, et quelques sous à l'aubergiste ; ensuite changeant de ton : Messieurs, *dit*-il je vous *remercie* de la politesse que vous m'*avez* faite ; j'*ai* à *demander* pardon à l'un de vous, d'*avoir* pris sa chambre ; mais comme on *a* refusé de *recevoir* un de mes amis, hier au soir, et qu'il *a* parié vingt louis que je ne *pourrais trouver* de logement ici ; j'*ai* fait le sourd ; je vous *laisse* à *penser* si j'*ai* bien rempli mon rôle.

69. Il *piqua* des deux, et les *laissa* dans l'étonnement.

62. She soon returned, saying he had taken possession of one of their bedrooms. They then agreed to go, all together, and turn him out by force; but when they approached the door, they heard him barricading it with furniture, and talking loudly to himself. They listened and heard him say:

63. What a misfortune is mine; any one might break open my door, and I should not hear it. Those gentlemen may be all honest men, and they may not; therefore as I have some money, I will not run any risk; no, I will not go to bed, nor put out the light; I will sit up all night, with my pistols cocked, and if any one should enter I will shoot him directly.

64. Hearing this they made no attempt to dislodge him; and he went to bed and passed the night very quietly, leaving the gentleman who had engaged the bed to find a lodging where he could.

65. The next morning, he came down, went to the stable for his horse, led him to the door, by which time the company were assembled to have another laugh at him.

66. As soon as he was mounted, he threw to the servant thirty sous for his horse and his lodging, and also some sous to the ostler; then, changing his manner, he said: Gentlemen, I thank you for the politeness you have shown me; I have to beg pardon of one of you for having taken his bed; but one of my friends was refused a lodging here last night, and he has betted twenty louis that I could not procure one; I played the deaf man; so I leave you to judge if I have done it well.

67. He then spurred his horse, and left them in amazement.

LE BARON SUTHERLAND.

68. Lorsque le baron Sutherland *était* à St. Pétersbourg, i *possédait* un très-joli petit chien, que l'impératrice Catherine *admirait* beaucoup : c'*était* la moindre des choses qu'il le lui *offrit*.

69. Elle *remercia* affectueusement le baron, *accepta* le carlin, le *nomma* Sutherland, et en *fit* son chien favori.

70. La pauvre petite bête *mangea* tant de friandises, et *prit* si peu d'exercice qu'elle en *creva* bientôt.

71. L'impératrice *aimait* tellement ce petit animal qu'elle *résolut* de le *faire empailler*, et *mettre* sous verre.

72. Le lendemain matin donc, elle *manda* un de ses officiers, et lui *dit* en français : *allez* tout de suite *chercher* Sutherland pour le *faire empailler*.

73. L'officier *crut* que l'Impératrice *avait* dit " *empaler* ;" et sans *penser* au chien, il *alla* tout droit chez le baron, dans la supposition que celui-ci *avait* commis un crime abominable ; et lui *dit* : Monsieur, il *faut* que vous me *suiviez* à l'instant.

74. Sutherland quelque peu surpris d'un ordre pareil, et surtout de la manière dont il *était* annoncé, en *demanda* l'explication : Monsieur, *répondit* l'officier, il ne m'*appartient* pas d'*approfondir* les ordres de Sa Majesté ; je n'*ai* qu'à les *exécuter*.

75. Les ordres de Sa Majesté ! s'*écria* le baron, quels ordres *peut*-elle *avoir* donnés à mon égard ? je *suis* fâché, *répondit* l'officier, de vous *apprendre* qu'elle *vient* à l'instant de me *donner* l'ordre positif de vous *faire empaler* ; je n'*oserais désobéir*.

76. Grand Dieu ! s'*écria* Sutherland, qu'*ai*-je donc *fait* pour *offenser* Sa Majesté ? Cela ne me *regarde* pas, Monsieur.

77. Au moins, *dit* Sutherland, avant que je *subisse* mon supplice, *conduisez*-moi au palais que j'*entende* ma condamnation de la bouche de Sa Majesté, et que j'en *sache* la cause ; car je vous *assure*, monsieur, sur mon honneur, que je n'*ai* fait, dit, ni même pensé quoi que ce soit contre l'Impératrice ou toute autre personne. Il *doit* y *avoir* quelque méprise.

BARON SUTHERLAND.

68. Baron Sutherland when at St. Petersburg, possessed a very handsome pug dog, which the Empress greatly admired: he could not do less than make her a present of it.

69. She graciously thanked the Baron, accepted the dog, gave him the name of Sutherland, and made him her favourite lap-dog.

70. He was fed with so many luxuries, and took so little exercise, that the poor thing soon died.

71. The Empress was so fond of the little animal, that she determined to have him stuffed and put into a glass case.

72. On the morning after his death, she said in French to one of her officers: Go directly, take Sutherland, and see him stuffed —*empailler*.

73. The officer thought she said *empaler*; and not thinking of the dog, he went immediatley to the baron's house, supposing he had committed some heinous crime, and said: Sir, you must follow me immediately.

74. Sutherland not a little surprised at such summons, and particularly at the manner in which it was announced, demanded some explanation; but the officer replied: Sir, it is not my duty to criticise the orders of Her Majesty; my duty is to see them executed.

75. The orders of Her Majesty! exclaimed the Baron; what orders can she have given with respect to me? I am sorry, replied the officer, to inform you that she has just given me peremptory orders to see you immediately empaled, and I dare not disobey.

76. Good God! cried Sutherland, me empaled! what have I done to offend Her Majesty? That is not my business, sir.

77. At least, said Sutherland, before my punishment, conduct me to the palace that I may hear my condemnation from her own mouth; for I assure you, sir, as a man of honour, that I have neither done, said, nor even thought anything against the Empress or any one else; therefore, be assured there is some mistake.

78. L'officier voyant le baron si convaincu de son innocence, *prit* sur lui de le *conduire* au palais.

79. Aussitôt que Sutherland *aperçut* l'impératrice, il s'*écria* : Comment *ai*-je eu le malheur, Madame, de vous *offenser*, pour m'*exposer* à un châtiment aussi cruel.

80. Catherine se *mit* à le *regarder*, et se tournant vers l'officier : Qu'*est*-ce que cela *veut dire*, monsieur, car je vous *assure*, je n'y *comprends* rien du tout.

81. Votre Majesté, *répondit* l'officier, ne m'*a*-t-elle pas donné l'ordre de *faire empaler* Sutherland ?

82. Catherine *éclata* de *rire*, et aussitôt qu'elle put *parler* : Monsieur Sutherland, *dit*-elle, ne vous *alarmez* pas, vous n'*avez* rien à *craindre*.

83. Ensuite, s'adressant à l'officier : Imbécile que vous *êtes*, c'*est* le petit carlin Sutherland que je vous *avais* dit de *faire empailler*, et non pas *empaler*.

84. Le baron *est* certainement bien un des derniers qui *pourrait imaginer* quelque chose contre moi.

FIN.

78. The officer, finding the Baron so confident of his innocence ventured to conduct him to the palace.

79. As soon as he saw the Empress, he exclaimed, How madam, have I been so unfortunate as to offend you, and subject myself to such a cruel order ?

80. Catharine, looked at him, and turning to the officer, she said : what is the meaning of this, sir ? for I protest I do not understand one word of it.

81. Did not Your Majesty, replied he, give me orders to go and see Sutherland empaled ?

82. Catharine immediately burst out laughing, and as soon as she could speak, said : Don't be alarmed baron, you have nothing to fear.

83. Then, speaking to the officer : You stupid man, she said, it was the dead pug Sutherland that I told you to see stuffed and not empaled.

84. The baron is, I am sure, one of the last men who would imagine anything against me.

THE END.